



Gc
974.402
M642h
1439161

M. L.

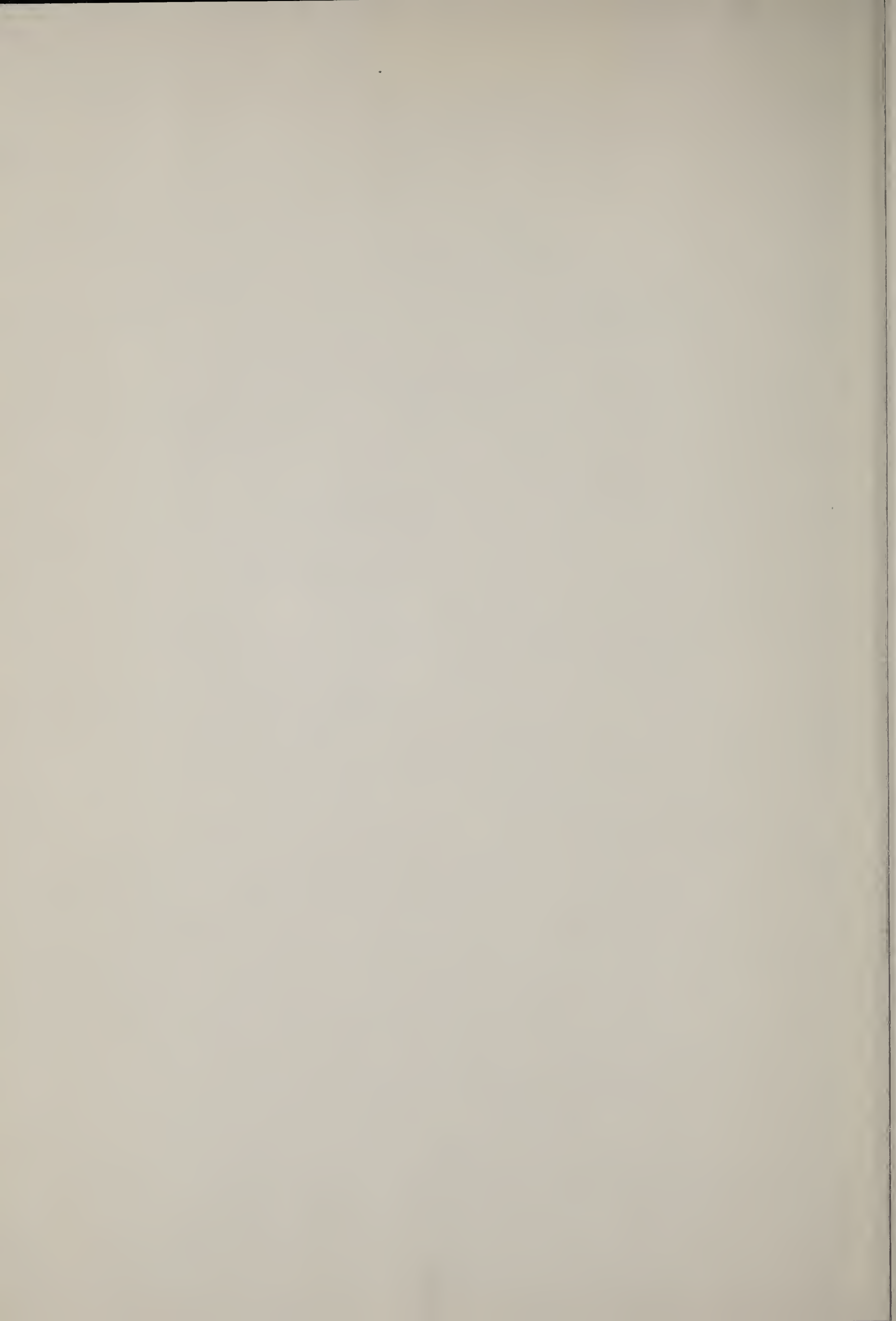
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

✓

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01114 8894







A
HISTORY OF^c
MILTON

By
EDWARD PIERCE HAMILTON

MCMLVII
MILTON HISTORICAL SOCIETY
MILTON · MASSACHUSETTS

© Copyright, 1957, by the Milton Historical Society

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

In memory of
L.B.H.

1439161

Goodspeed. 10.00 3-18-68 L.H. 13649 P.O. 2505

Acknowledgements

MANY have been of help and assistance to me in writing this book. I owe, however, special thanks to the friend who I might say lured me into starting the research that has led to this history, Walter Muir Whitehill. He has done penance by reading the manuscript and so must be forgiven. Two other friends, Stephen T. Riley and Clifford K. Shipton, have been of much assistance and encouragement. I have also been greatly aided in my delvings in the Norfolk and Suffolk Registries of Deeds and of Probate by the wonderfully complete and meticulous index of Milton deeds, wills and inventories compiled many years ago by the late Deacon John Atherton Tucker, a keen student of Milton history. His studies of Milton tax lists and locations of old houses have also been of great assistance. Many other Milton friends have aided me with suggestions or useful criticism, but they would be too numerous to record. Finally I owe a word of thanks and appreciation to those teachers of history at whose feet I was once so fortunate as to sit, Edward Channing, Albert Bushnell Hart, Roger B. Merriman, Samuel Eliot Morison and Frederick J. Turner.

Milton, October 1956

Edward P. Hamilton



Contents

To the Reader	xiii
Introduction	3
The Story of the Town	
The Beginnings	7
1662	23
1700	27
1770	33
1831	41
1857	45
1888	49
The New Century	57
The River	63
The Schools	91
The Church	113
Town Meeting	141
The Poor	165
The Highways	169
The Police	175
The Firemen	179

The Library	189
The Wars	191
First Things	209
Appendices	
1. The Possessions of our Ancestors	221
2. Milton Houses Built Before 1805 and Still Standing in 1955	242
3. Statistical and Financial Figures	245
4. Biographical Sketches of Prominent Milton Residents 1634–1929	247
5. Suggested Further Reading	264
6. Major Changes and Events Since 1929	265
Bibliography	266
Index	267

List of Illustrations

Map of Milton, 1634	5
Indian Wigwams	<i>opposite</i> 9
Peak House	<i>opposite</i> 16
Neponset Oyster Shell	<i>opposite</i> 16
Map of Early Land Grants	20
Map of Milton, 1662	24
Map of Milton, 1700	28
Robert Tucker House	29
Map of Milton, 1770	32
Map of Milton Village, 1765	35
William Foye House	36
Badlam Mirror	<i>opposite</i> 36
1774 Pound	<i>opposite</i> 36
Governor Hutchinson House	38
Wadsworth House	39
Map of Milton, 1831	40
Map of Milton Village, 1826	43
Paul's Bridge	44
East Milton Square, about 1860	<i>opposite</i> 45
Map of Milton, 1857	47
Milton Village, about 1865	<i>opposite</i> 49
Map of Milton, 1888	51
Carey Hill in the 1890's	<i>opposite</i> 53
Milton Village in 1885	53
A Brush Hill Governess and her charges	<i>opposite</i> 55
A Meadowbrook Cart	<i>opposite</i> 55
A Railroad President's Mansion of the 1880's	56
Milton Village, about 1900	<i>opposite</i> 58

Kerrigan's Corner, about 1910	<i>opposite</i> 58
Broadside of 1776	<i>opposite</i> 71
Hannon's Chocolate Wrapper	<i>opposite</i> 74
Mattapan Paper Mill	<i>opposite</i> 74
Chart of Mills on the Neponset	79
Village Mills, about 1865	<i>opposite</i> 81
View from Adams Street in 1885	88
"The Old Brick"	<i>opposite</i> 101
"The Old Academy Building"	102
Children at the Center School	<i>opposite</i> 108
The New Academy	111
Page of Records of Milton Church	<i>opposite</i> 126
Milton Churches	139
Page from Milton Town Records	<i>opposite</i> 149
Notification of Town Meeting, 1774	<i>opposite</i> 149
Warrant for 1843 Town Meeting	<i>opposite</i> 156
1955 Town Meeting	<i>opposite</i> 162
Blue Hill Avenue, about 1890	<i>opposite</i> 173
East Milton Square	<i>opposite</i> 173
The Police Force, about 1905	<i>opposite</i> 175
Police Department Stanley Steamer, 1912	<i>opposite</i> 176
Fountain Engine No. 1, 1858	<i>opposite</i> 183
Steam Pumper and Hose Wagon	<i>opposite</i> 186
The Suffolk Resolves House	<i>opposite</i> 200
First R. R. Car in America	210
Sheer Pole	211
Mr. Rotch and Weather Balloon	<i>opposite</i> 215
Picnic on Blue Hill	<i>opposite</i> 215
First Airborne Recording Thermometer	<i>opposite</i> 218
Blue Hill Radiosonde	<i>opposite</i> 218
Population and Real Estate Evaluation Chart	244

To the Reader

MANY years have passed since Dr. Teele wrote his *History of Milton*, and many changes have taken place, both in the character of our town, and in the methods of writing history. In 1887 Milton was a small community, of diverse interests it is true, but still in many ways a large family, where most people knew, or knew of, every one else. Dr. Teele's interest appears to have been largely in the early inhabitants, wars, first things, local geography, and personages, and he showed relatively little knowledge or concern in the social and economic phases of life. He apparently believed that Milton people wanted to know primarily about the early families, their own ancestors, and the location of the sites of the old houses, as well as the flora and fauna, and the lives of many men then living or only recently dead. He had a vast fund of information available concerning these and many other things. The book was planned very much in the fashion of other town histories of the day, and covered primarily those matters which appealed to the readers of over two generations ago. It still remains the basic source of Milton material, but in some ways it fails to meet the needs of today. Moreover it is no longer available, and the existing copies are rapidly falling to pieces.

I have attempted primarily to trace the growth and the changes of our town from its first exploration by the white men down to the period when it became a suburb of Boston. In doing this I have at the same time tried, in the case of some subjects, to avoid the purely local aspect, and to make a somewhat broader approach. In other words, if there was a certain action or condition known to have existed generally in New England, yet there is no specific record of it here in Milton, I have not hesitated to borrow it from elsewhere and to include it here. Only in this way can the smooth transition of the whole be presented. By doing this I also hope that a local history of a town of the old Bay Colony will also to a considerable extent present a general sketch of New England history over the same period. The social and

To the Reader

economic developments, the Church, the Schools, and Town Meeting were all very nearly the same throughout the towns bordering on Massachusetts Bay, and, save for personalities, one was much like another. The names and the lives of the early inhabitants mean less today to our town than they did when their descendants still formed a large proportion of Milton, and I have omitted from the text much of the material of that nature which Dr. Teele had included in his book. Brief sketches of a considerable number of people have been included in a biographical appendix for those who wish more information on this subject, but a history should not attempt to be a genealogy, and this appendix makes no claim to be complete.

In writing history one must stand back a few years in order to gain sufficient perspective. Accordingly I have chosen to stop at the year 1929, and there are two important reasons for this choice. That year marked the end of an economic and social era, and the impact of the resulting changes has perhaps been greater here than in many other places. The new era initiated the breaking up of many of the large estates which wealthy Bostonians had been establishing in Milton over the previous two generations. Thus new land became available for further real estate development. The move from city to suburb had been under way for many years, but it received greatly added impetus here from the extension of the Metropolitan rapid transit system. It was in this same year of 1929 that the old steam railroad gave place to the electric surface car and the Cambridge Subway. These two factors were in a very few years, assisted also by the automobile and the demands of a rising standard of living, to change the whole character and aspect of our town, and to result in a very great increase in population in a relatively short time. Old families and old traditions were overwhelmed by the inrush of new population, and old Milton disappeared—almost overnight it seems in looking back, but it really has been a quarter century.

I have chosen to present my material in a somewhat different manner than that which has customarily been used in the local history. First, I have attempted at each of several dates to depict what the town then was like, how big it was, and what was going on. Time is fluid and cannot be neatly sliced off and tied up, each piece by itself, and I have not attempted to re-

To the Reader

strict each episode solely to its precise date. History, moreover, is always in transition and periods overlap, just as some old men still wore knee breeches and cocked hats while their contemporaries were sporting the stovepipe and the uncreased pantaloons which we associate with Abraham Lincoln.

Certain special subjects are treated in monograph form, and each of the chapters which concern them is complete in itself. In several appendices there is placed material which will have a special interest to some, but not to all, and hence is better left somewhat separate from the rest of the text.

The genealogist will discover almost nothing here to aid him in his researches, but it is my hope that the reader who wishes to learn of the past of his town will here find a broad picture of those major changes, political, economic, religious and social through which Milton has passed during the more than three hundred years of occupancy of the soil upon which we live today.

Finally I must apologize for, or better perhaps explain, what may appear to be a somewhat informal method of presentation. History may be written in a stately and ponderous style, and then few but the scholar will read it. If one can keep on a more informal plane, bring in a little fun where possible, and yet adhere to the solid truth at all times, history will be much pleasanter to read. It is with that approach that I have tried to write, and I have done my best to make this book as painless to read as possible.



A History of Milton



Introduction

THIS is the story of a town of old New England and its gradual progress from the camping ground of the Indian, through its various transitions, to its ultimate fate, a residential suburb of a great city. The Indian gave way to the Puritan farmer, intent upon following his chosen creed into a new and unsettled land, and yet, probably in many cases, most willing to better his economic condition in so doing. The tide of immigration was abruptly cut off by the Parliamentary wars of the 1640's and for many years this initial homogeneous population of Englishmen remained largely isolated. It bred and multiplied greatly, mellowing as the years went on from the relative narrowness of the initial theocracy, and yet retaining many of the old characteristics. Thus was the old-time New Englander produced, with his faults it is true, but also with his balancing virtues. Of such a stock, always with the occasional exception, the Scot, the Scotch Irishman, and the Negro, were the inhabitants of Milton for nearly all of its first two hundred years, while the hamlet of little farms grew into the prosperous country town.

By the middle of the last century two little wavelets of new migration had started to trickle into the town, one from Ireland, the other from the neighboring city. Both were small and gentle and they quickly merged into and were absorbed by the town, which continued to grow, but still retained its old New England character. Gradually the effect of the city was felt more and more. Milton was ceasing to be a relatively self-sufficient community and was starting to become a suburb. Finally within the last generation a tidal wave of migration from Boston engulfed and eradicated the last remnants of the quiet old country town. We have, however, been most fortunate

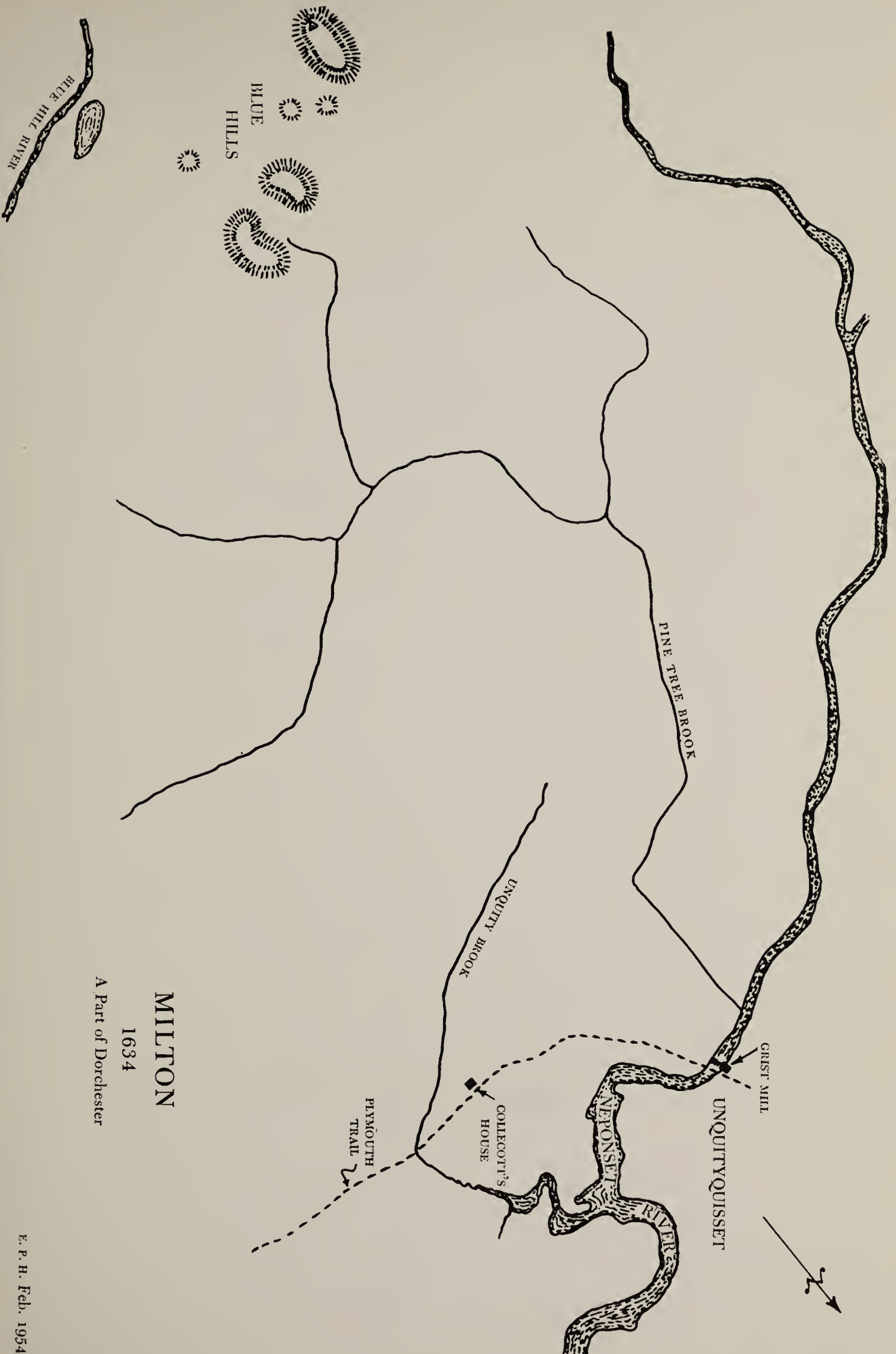
Introduction

in that, despite the many great changes, the old Yankee spirit of service to the community and the desire for integrity in local government have largely persisted. Relative newcomers are just as proud of the town and just as desirous of maintaining those characteristics which caused them to select it as a place in which to live as are the few remaining descendants of the Voses, the Tuckers and the Swifts.

Note on the Maps

This and the following maps attempt to present a graphic picture of the town from 1634 until 1888, after which date further maps would serve little purpose. I have shown on each map all the roads that appear from the records to have existed at the approximate date chosen, and all the houses that I can locate with what I believe is a reasonable degree of accuracy. In most cases I have assumed that a house once built continued to exist and thus the houses of one map are shown on the succeeding one. As an important new road first appears I have noted against it the name by which it, or that road of which it today constitutes a part, is now known. In order to prevent cluttering up the maps with too many names I have not repeated these street names after their first appearance. The four maps previous to that of 1831 are reconstructions, and as such represent my best judgment, assisted by all available data. They cannot, however, be considered as entirely correct, although I do believe that they give a good general idea of the state of the town at the various periods selected. The last three maps are reproductions of actual contemporary maps with a few minor additions.

Of the two Village maps included, that for 1765 is my reconstruction, while that for 1826 is copied from an actual survey.



MILTON

1634

A Part of Dorchester

The Story of the Town

The Beginnings

VERY probably the first white man to visit Milton was "mine host of Ma-re Mount", Thomas Morton. He stated in his book, *The New English Canaan*, that he spent the summer of 1622 at Wessagusset on the south side of Weymouth Fore River, and that he explored the surrounding countryside. Three years later he was back again, established now at Merrymount, some two miles from the eastern edge of Milton, and he spent much time afield with his gun and his trained hawks in the country to the west. His book is the earliest detailed description of this area and its Indians, and it is an excellent one.

An expedition from Plymouth had visited Boston Bay in the fall of 1621, and a good description of the trip is on record. This unfortunately is not sufficiently clear to allow us to determine exactly where they went. Dr. Teele believed,¹ and he was not alone, that these Pilgrims explored Milton, while others concluded that they had visited the mouth of the Mystic rather than that of the Neponset. While we can never be certain, the weight of evidence seems very much to favor the area north of Boston, and today it appears highly improbable that the Pilgrims got nearer to Milton than Squantum.

It certainly is of no great importance who first explored the Milton area, but we are most interested in what the land was then like. Fortunately there are a number of descriptions of the general Massachusetts Bay area, and some specific information concerning our particular part of it.

The Milton Indians are a subject which appears to be of great interest to everybody, and I believe that this is as good a place as any to tell about them,

1. A. K. Teele, *The History of Milton* (Boston, 1887).

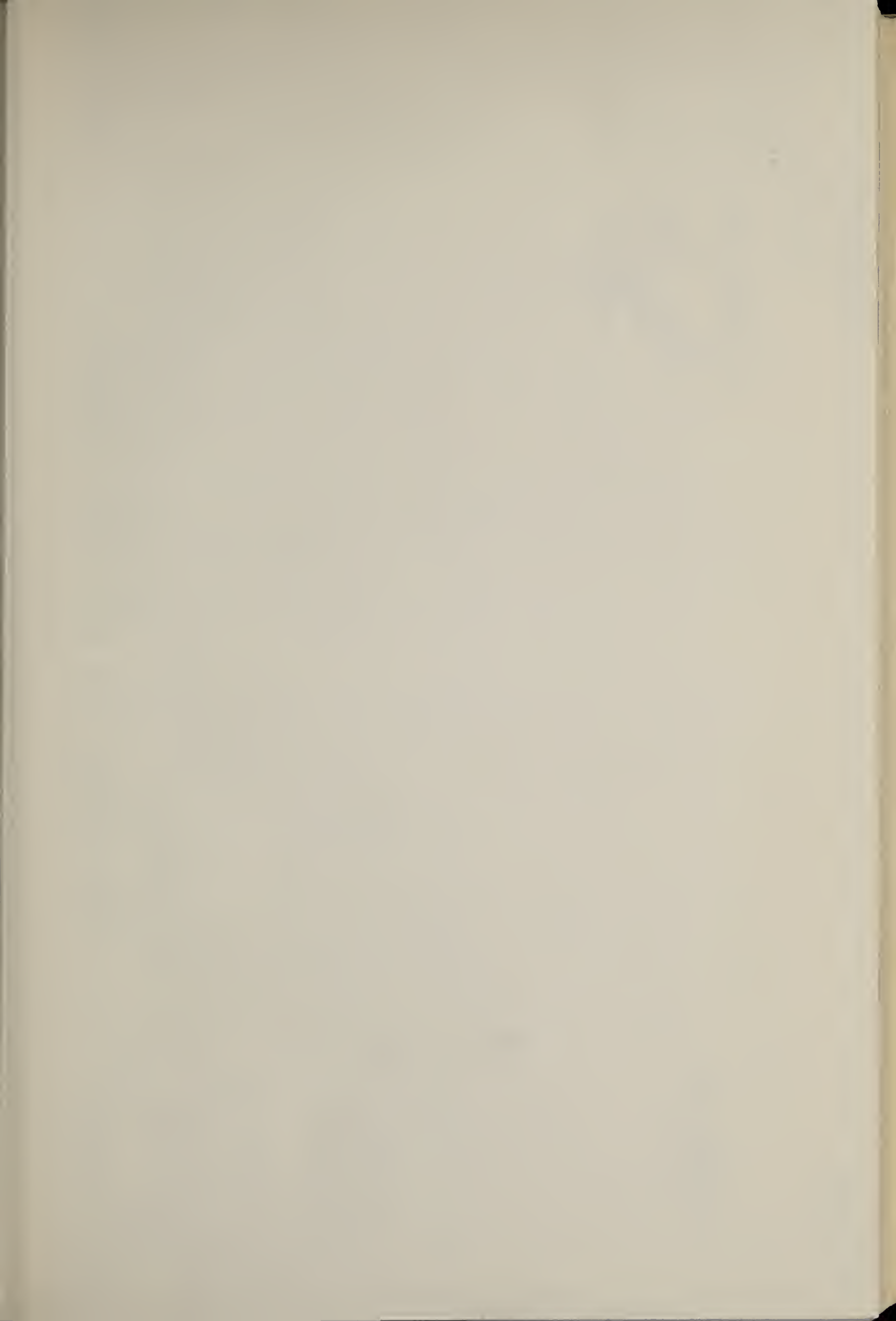
History of Milton

although I fear that the reader will be disappointed, for the Milton Indian was a harmless soul who deserved a better fate than that which he finally gained.

Our region was inhabited by the tribe of Massachusetts Indians, and they were a race which had advanced somewhat beyond barbarism, migratory to a limited extent, but returning to their cornfields each year. They represented a little higher state of civilization than did the Indians of Maine, a fierce and warlike people.

In the first decade of the seventeenth century the Massachusetts tribe probably numbered between four and five thousand, divided about equally north and south of the Charles. In 1616-17 they were swept by some sort of contagious disease which was devastating in its effects. We do not know what it was, but it probably came from Europe, and may have been measles or some similar ill against which they had no immunity. This plague appears to have covered all of eastern New England from southern Maine to Narragansett Bay, and to have extended inland thirty or forty miles. Throughout all this region scarcely one Indian out of twenty survived. In 1630 the entire Indian population of the Boston Bay area consisted of only about 125. Chickataubut was the chief of the Neponset group and he ruled only fifty or sixty subjects, while two other groups, each almost as large, lived on the Saugus and Mystic Rivers. To the westward no Indians were found for seventy or eighty miles, until the Nipmuck country near Webster was reached. Over the next ten years the great Puritan migration poured into the area of Massachusetts Bay, and the few remaining natives were submerged and overwhelmed. Indian troubles of the future were to develop from outside of this region and never from within.

The Neponset group moved around the Milton-Quincy-Dedham area with the seasons, planting their corn in Milton and near Wollaston, and hunting in the Blue Hills and beyond, but the falls of the Neponset at the head of tidewater seem to have become their most favored habitation. This they called Unquity-Quisset, shortened to Unquity by the whitemen. Here they fished in the spring, and after the grist mill was built I can imagine them loitering there, begging a little meal of the miller, and making a nui-





INDIAN WIGWAMS One is covered with grass mats lashed down with cords, while the bark covering of the other is held in place by sticks and branches tied through to the inner frame. (Photos from model by Theo. B. Pitman at Fruitland's Museum)

The Story of the Town

sance of themselves. The Rev. John Eliot first preached to them in the autumn of 1646 below the falls of the Neponset at Unquity. He encouraged them to move away from the white settlements and to start building a new town in the Sharon-Stoughton area. It was due to his exertions that a reservation of some six thousand acres was established for them at Ponkapoag by the Town of Dorchester in 1657. In 1670 there were twelve families on this reservation, a total of sixty souls, and they had a chief, a constable, and a schoolteacher. The more industrious of the Indians spent much of their time in a cedar swamp making clapboards and shingles for the Boston market. After King Philip's War broke out in 1675 they were moved to Deer Island in Boston Harbor, and later back to Brush Hill, where they were under the charge of Quartermaster Thomas Swift of Milton. Except for one short period when there was a morning and evening roll call, it does not appear that they were forced to reside on the reservation, and they continued to make trips to the falls at Unquity. In 1666 the Dorchester records mention an Indian dying of smallpox in his wigwam² a little north of Neponset Mill, probably somewhere near St. Gregory's Church. The Town of Dorchester in 1674 forbade anyone employing Indians to get out shingles or clapboards in Town swamps unless they were given a copy of a permit obtained from the Selectmen. A few years later the Rev. Peter Thacher was hiring two Indians to clear some of his land in Milton. Thus we find the few remaining Indians gradually degenerating into something part way between a pauper and an unskilled laborer, and as time went on intermarrying more and more with negroes, so that practically speaking the race had disappeared in Eastern Massachusetts by about the time of the Revolution.

2. The wigwam of the New England Indian was very different from the skin-covered conical teepee of the Western Plains. It was built by sticking the butt ends of saplings upright in the ground in the shape of a circle, and bending in and lashing together the slender ends, each pair forming an inverted u. The resulting framework, not unlike half a sphere in shape, was covered with grass mats or bark lashed in place, leaving a smoke hole in the top at the center. Some Eastern and Middle Atlantic Indians built them with a rectangular floor plan, arched in cross section, but Morton's description of the Massachusetts Indians mentions the circular type only. Many of the early settlers built rectangular wigwams for their first temporary dwellings. There is record of a circular wigwam built by Indians which was fifty feet across and was used as a council house.

History of Milton

D. T. V. Huntoon, in his most excellent *History of Canton*,³ records quite a bit about the tribe after it had moved to Ponkapoag. He makes a most interesting statement to the effect that in the early days if a negro slave married an Indian woman the children were born free. This would easily account for some of the mixed marriages. An early record refers to a man as "an Indian mulatto of the Punkapoag tribe". Some of the family names of the Punkapoags were Moho, Momentaug, Ahauton, Pomham, Bancroft, George, and Croud, also spelled Crowd. They were always considered to be wards of the Province, and later of the State, and one or more appointed guardians kept watch over their welfare. The last piece of the old Reservation was sold by the guardians in 1827. An 1849 report recorded the Punkapoag tribe as consisting of four men and six women, while eight years later the guardians said that the tribe was nearly extinct, only about fifteen or twenty remaining, and those mostly of mixed blood. Of these, only three owned real estate, but all were well behaved and their children attended the Town schools. Shortly after this the guardians were discharged, and the remaining Punkapoags received full rights of citizenship.

There is one record of an Indian attempting to break into a Dorchester house in 1675, but I am more inclined to think that he was a local Indian under the influence of "firewater" than that he was one of King Philip's warriors. There is absolutely no mention of any trouble within the area of Milton proper, and the nearest that the war came to this area was an Indian raid on part of Braintree where a man was "knocked on the head" and a woman "captivated" in January of 1676. A number of Milton men were killed, but this was while on military service on the frontier. There never was any Indian trouble within the borders of Milton.

A very old Indian named Mingo lived as late as 1763 on the south side of Canton Avenue just beyond Robbins Street. In 1898 Mingo Street was built in the vicinity of the site of his shack, and at a point eight hundred feet in from Canton Avenue five graves, apparently those of Indians, were encountered. Oddly enough it was within almost a stone's throw of here that there

3. Cambridge, 1893. He, incidentally, was a descendant of Daniel Vose of Milton, and son of the Rev. Benjamin Huntoon, who had been the first Unitarian minister of the First Parish Church.

The Story of the Town

lived one of the last known Milton residents of Indian ancestry. This was Mrs. Mary Crowd, born in Canton of the Punkapoag Indians, who died at 970 Canton Avenue in 1916 in her ninety-first year.

That is all that I can learn of the history and end of the Neponset tribe of the Massachusetts Indians. It is rather an anticlimactic one. Instead of the tomahawk and the warpath we have a little group of people, by nature unfitted for the white man's civilization, adjusting themselves as well as they could to the changing conditions, and finally being absorbed into the Negro race. In 1849 it was said that there still lived in Ponkapoag one pure-blooded Indian, the last of his tribe, and the last of his race in our vicinity.

The early inhabitants of the Bay Colony meant well by the scattered groups of Indians that remained within the settled areas. One of the purposes of the migration to New England, largely, I am afraid, only an ostensible one, was the Christianization of the natives, and many earnest attempts were made. The best known and most effective efforts were those of the Rev. John Eliot of Roxbury, but many others did their bit. Mrs. William Daniels, who lived where 320 Adams Street now stands, for three years after 1650 taught a group of local Indians to read. The Commissioners of the United Colonies rewarded her with £12 for her services, and encouraged her to continue for at least another year. She lived until 1680, but we do not know how long she kept up her teaching.

Various laws were passed to protect the rights of the Indians. A white man was not allowed to purchase lands from them without obtaining a license from the General Court, and their wrongs were redressed in so far as was practicable. In 1652 the Town of Dorchester paid three shillings damage "for trespass done in the Indians' corne by the towne bull". As far as it is possible to determine, our local Indians became Christianized, at least in theory, caused no trouble during King Philip's War, and continued to exist as harmless and rather helpless beings alongside a civilization into which they could never really fit, until ultimately they ceased to exist as a race. The Dorchester and Milton settlers did their best for the remnants of the Neponset Indians, tried to help them, and employed them as servants and field laborers, but it was only after their blood had merged into that of

History of Milton

another race that they were able to find their place in our civilization.

There is an amusing entry in the official records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony which, I think, typifies the attitude of the Indian. Five chieftains were being solemnly catechized by the General Court in 1643, and they were asked among other things to promise to do no unnecessary work on the Sabbath. They answered that that "was easy to them: they had not much to do any day. . . ."

In 1636 Kitchamakin, brother of Chickataubut, who had died of smallpox three years before, deeded to Richard Collocot, as agent of the Town of Dorchester, all of the Indian lands south of the Neponset, and within the established boundaries of the Town, reserving only forty acres for himself and his people, and another forty which he had already given to Collocot personally. The consideration was twenty fathoms of wampum.

Charles Josiah, grandson of Chickataubut, executed another deed in June of 1684, which confirmed the grant to the proprietors of Dorchester and Milton of all the lands within the two towns, except for the Reservation at Ponkapoag. This was at the time when the charter of the Bay Colony was in the process of being abrogated by King Charles, and with it, in a technical sense at least, all existing land grants in Massachusetts would be voided. Hence the Towns of Milton and Dorchester believed it wise to obtain a new deed from the Indians.

There are various records which give us a reasonably good idea of what Milton was like in the earliest days. It was far from the primeval forest of the later frontier, for parts of it had been cleared and cultivated by the Indians for many years. Just west of Wollaston, and probably extending into parts of East Milton, were "the Massachusetts Fields", the cornfields of the Neponset Indians. "Mount Wollaston, a very fertile soil . . . there being great store of plain ground without trees. . . .", thus William Wood described it in 1633. Part of these fields were early cultivated by the Dorchester settlers, but the Wollaston lands themselves were annexed to Boston in 1634. There was another so-called "Indian Field" in Unquity, comprising most of the land from the top of Milton Hill north to the Neponset River and bordered

The Story of the Town

to the west approximately by School Street. These open fields had been burned by the Indians twice each year, in the spring and in the fall, and were kept entirely free from shrubbery and small trees. This was fortunate, for the early settlers had yet to learn how to clear virgin forest and to make it into farm land. Thus we can think of this area as generally forest land but interspersed with large stretches of open fields. Larger trees survived the grass and brush fires and flourished. Morton wrote that these open fields with some large trees scattered about looked much like the parks of well-to-do Englishmen at home. There also were swamps and many little brooks and rivers to impede the traveller. It was evidently mostly in Milton and Braintree that a man named Alderman of Bear Cove (Hingham) was lost for three days and two nights in 1634 without seeing a house or wigwam, or a single man, either white or red. He finally came out of the wilderness at Scituate, badly torn and scratched by cedar swamps and briar patches. Thomas Morton of Merrymount, who loved the place, describes our area with great enthusiasm, ". . . so many goodly groves of trees, dainty fine round rising hillucks, delicate large plaines, sweete cristall fountaines, and cleare running streames that twine in fine meanders through the meads, making so sweete a murmuring noise to heare as would lull the sences with delight a sleepe, so pleasantly do they glide upon the pebble stones. . . ." ⁴ Another early writer noted: ". . . good water to drink till wine or beer can be made . . ." ⁵

Without going into the matter in detail it can be said that the varieties of forest trees which existed in 1630 were essentially those that we have today, with the exception of the chestnut, lost some forty years ago through a fungus disease. Elm, on the other hand, was somewhat rare, according to Morton. Sassafras was then common in New England, and presumably here, but it was much sought after commercially in the early days, and today it is very scarce. Fruit trees were brought over from England, apparently as seed rather than as seedlings.

4. Thomas Morton, *The New English Canaan*, Prince Society edition.

5. Dudley's letter to the Countess of Lincoln in Young's *Chronicles of First Planters of Massachusetts Bay* (Boston, 1846).

History of Milton

Wild game abounded. Moose were found a little to the north and west, but deer were everywhere. Bears were very common and as late as 1725 twenty were reported killed in one week within two⁶ miles of Boston. They were much sought for their fat and their skins. Wolves roamed the area in large numbers and carried a bounty on their heads, but despite this they existed in Milton at least as late as 1693, when John Fenno collected twenty shillings for killing a full-grown wolf. Wolf hooks are referred to in the early records, and were some sort of large fish hooks or small grapnels which were embedded in fat or spoiled meat, and left in places where wolves might find and swallow them. I have found early references to their use, but no description. Dorchester drew twenty-five of these hooks from William Pynchon, the Treasurer of the Colony, in 1636, and several other towns each received a similar number. Wolf pits were also dug to trap the animals. Steel traps did not come into use until nearly a hundred years later. At this time wolves, even when in packs, would usually run away from a man. It is recorded that the small spaniel of a Plymouth man was chased between his master's legs by a pair of wolves. The man belabored them with a fence post until they backed off a little and sat on their haunches grinning at him for a bit, finally running away. In 1632 Indians were rewarded with a coat worth twelve shillings for killing a wolf, while white settlers got £1 or, in at least one case, £2, a considerable sum in those days. Oddly enough, a simple post and rail fence was found to act as a barrier which wolves would not pass, and cattle surrounded by a plain rail fence were reported to be entirely safe from them. I imagine that the wolves later learned better, and that more complete fencing was required.

Again I fall back on Thomas Morton, who admittedly was a rascal and a scalawag, but not quite as bad as he was painted by the Pilgrims and by the Puritans of Boston Bay. I confess to a sneaking liking for the man. "Turkies there are, which divers times in great flocks have sallied by our doores; and then a gunne, being commonly in readinesse, salutes them with such courtesie, as makes them take a turne in the cooke roome." Great inroads were soon made on these birds, and by 1670 they were reported to have become

6. I believe that this two is a mistake for twenty or some other figure, but the record says "two".

The Story of the Town

very rare. Some were very large, weights of over forty pounds being on record. Ducks, geese, and swans fed in myriads in the Neponset salt marshes, and in the "fowle meadows" farther upstream beyond Brush Hill. Morton said that it was the custom at his house at Merrymount to give a whole duck to each guest at meals. The passenger pigeons flew overhead in vast flocks, sometimes taking two or more hours to pass, and blotting out the light like a thundercloud.

The heath hen, which finally became extinct within the last few years, was then very common, and was usually found in the more open areas. The ruffed grouse, however, was then as now a bird of the deeper woods.

When Israel Stoughton built Neponset Mill in 1634 he received permission to set up a weir to trap alewives, which he was to sell at five shillings a thousand. These were the fish that Squanto taught the Pilgrims to use to fertilize their corn fields, but they also were smoked and eaten by the settlers. The Neponset was full of fish of all sorts in those days, striped bass and shad, and sometimes mackerel, as well as the more lowly flounder, and the settlers depended upon them for a considerable part of their food.

Samuel Pierce, who lived in Dorchester a little north of where Adams Street⁷ now joins Granite Avenue and crosses the Old Colony Boulevard, and was a colonel in the Revolution, kept a diary for many years. In it there are records of crops, weather, and fishing, and he also tells of making a seine which he later put to good use in the Neponset.

"6 June 1769 Caught 1500 shad at Pine Neck with a sein at one time.

25 June 1772 We made the largest haul of fish, caught 6000 shad, mainhadden and bass.

14 June 1773 Made a large haul of shad; caught 4000; sent 40 barrels to Boston.

13 June 1774 Stopped Pine Neck Creek; caught 200 shad and 14 bass."

A hundred years ago Edmund J. Baker wrote in *The History of the Town of Dorchester*⁸ that as late as the early 1800's striped bass were still being taken

7. The old Pierce house, built about 1640, still stands on Oakton St., Dorchester, owned and occupied by direct descendants of the original builder, probably a unique record for this continent.

8. Boston: Dorchester Antiquarian Soc., 1859.

History of Milton

in the Neponset by setting a net across the outlet of Gulliver's or Sagamore Creek at high water. As the tide ebbed, the fish were trapped and scooped up in dip nets. Two or three excited Puritans dashing around in a shallow tidal creek trying to net a very lively ten or fifteen pound fish must have presented a spirited sight. I can easily imagine one of them involuntarily sitting down in the mud, and expressing himself in words of which his pastor would not at all have approved. By 1850 the bass had long disappeared, and even shad and alewives were seldom seen in the river. A hundred and fifty years ago, tom cod could be caught with a dip net at the head of tidewater below the lower falls. Great quantities were sold at five or six cents a bushel, and mostly used as fertilizer. Today we still have smelts in the river, but the shad and the striped bass are entirely gone, as are the oysters. Governor Hutchinson imported a boatload of these last from Virginia, and tried to stock the Neponset, but the oysters failed to take hold. They had existed here in earlier years, for recent dredging operations have brought up great quantities of shells much larger than those we see today, some of them over ten inches long. "The oysters be great ones in form of a shoo horne, some be a foote long, these breede on certaine bankes that are bare every spring tide. This fish without the shell is so big that must admit of a division before you can well get it into your mouth."⁹ Edmund J. Baker wrote of having occasionally seen some as long as twelve or fourteen inches near the present Rapid Transit bridge in Milton Village, but that was back in about 1820, when he was a boy.

In England at the time of the Puritan migration mussels were considered something of a delicacy, and they were welcomed as a source of food over here. Clams were often used as feed for swine, and there are references in the Dorchester records which show that the pigs were driven to the clam flats at low tide, and allowed to grub for clams. It evidently was sometimes a problem to get them out of the sticky mud before the rising tide caught them.

Lobsters were extremely common at the time of the first settlements, and were picked up in quantities along the beaches at low tide. Morton said that he soon tired of eating them and only used them for fishbait.

9. William Wood, "New England Prospect", in Young's *Chronicles*.



PEAK HOUSE, MEDFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS

The best known example of the first type of permanent housing built by the earliest settlers. The very sharp roof indicates that it probably was originally thatched.

(Soc. Pres. N. E. Antiquities)



OYSTER SHELL DREDGED FROM NEPONSET RIVER

"The oysters be great ones in form of a shoo horn—"

The Story of the Town

During the first year or two of the settlement wild game, as well as fish, lobsters, clams, mussels and oysters, eked out by the remains of the provisions which they had brought over, kept the settlers alive, but soon the Indian corn and pumpkins became plentiful. Capt. Johnson, in his *Wonder Working Providence*, said “. . . and let no man make a jest at pumkins, for with this fruit the Lord was pleased to feed his people to their good content, till corne and cattell were increased.” Tradition at Plymouth has handed down a little ditty along these same lines.

“Pompions at morning, pompions at noon,
Were it not for pompions we would all be undone.”

Once the cornfields were established and the dairy herds became of fair size, the diet of the settlers would have been not unlike that which they had known in England. The one major exception was the bread. Wheat did not grow well here, and Indian corn was the staple cereal, eaten as mush and Indian Pudding. Rye was grown, and the standard bread was composed of two parts of corn meal to one of rye flour. It probably was not unlike our present brown bread, but without molasses.

We find some complaints that the weather was both hotter and colder than in England, but the major annoyances seem to have been three in number, wolves, rattlesnakes, and mosquitoes. The first two are gone, but the mosquitoes still are with us, and it is difficult to imagine what life would be like without window screens.

The first settlers of Dorchester came over as an organized company. Each £50 share entitled the holder to two hundred acres of land and a town house lot, with an additional fifty acres for each member of his family. Initially only the land along Boston Bay between South Boston Neck and the Neponset was occupied. The early boundaries of the Town of Dorchester seem to have been a little vague, but the General Court soon enlarged and defined the area, and by 1637 it included the present towns of Milton, Canton, Stoughton, Sharon, Foxboro, and parts of Wrentham, thus extending almost to the Rhode Island border.

History of Milton

For a few short years the Neponset River was practically the southern limit of the Boston Bay settlements. Thomas Morton's plantation at Merry-mount had been burned by order of Governor Winthrop in 1630, but the settlement at Wessagusset (Fore River) continued, and in 1635 became the Town of Weymouth, although it still remained a very small town. The open fields at Wollaston were a great attraction, and by 1632 we find grants south of the river being made to Dorchester settlers. It seems probable that at first these lands were used as fields only, the farmers returning to Dorchester after the day's work. In 1634 Wollaston, the area from the present eastern limits of Milton to the sea, was annexed to Boston, and a settlement commenced. Later this was to become Braintree, the north precinct of which is now Quincy. It was probably in this same year that the first house was built in what today is Milton. "It is ordered that Rich: Callecott shall set up an house, without the pale. . . ." ¹⁰ He was an important settler, who apparently had preceded the Dorchester Company, and he was involved in trading with the Indians for furs, and later in land speculations on Cape Cod and in Maine. Collecot's name appears many times in the records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. In 1637 he was appointed supply officer for the expedition against the Pequot Indians, responsible for provision of all requirements of food and transport. Three years later he got into a spot of trouble, and was fined £10 for having repairs made on guns owned by two Indians, a most heinous offense under Colony laws. By pleading that he had forgotten the law he got off by paying only ten shillings. A year later Collecot, his neighbor John Holman, of Unquity, and Lieut. Willard, probably of Concord, were granted a monopoly of the fur trade, provided that they would take a few more into partnership, and would pay one-twentieth of their receipts to the Colony.

The house that Collecot built was, so far as can be determined, the first in Milton, and it was located in the near vicinity of Algerine Corner, ¹¹ the junc-

10. Dorchester Records, 1 September 1634.

11. One day in the early 1800's when our country was having trouble with the Algerian pirates, Edward H. Robbins told one resident of the area near the junction of Adams, Centre and Pleasant Streets whom he found stealing his firewood that he and his friends were a "set of Algerines". The place ever after was called "Algerine Corner", although the Town in the 1880's attempted to give it the prosaic name of "Union Square".

The Story of the Town

tion of Adams, Centre, and Pleasant Streets, possibly in the narrow strip between Adams and Centre a short distance west of the Corner. It is my belief that this house was built for a hired farmer, and that Collecot never actually lived there until much later. His activities were too varied and widespread to be controlled from Unquity, and we know that he also owned another house in Dorchester, as well as one in Boston.

The first bridge across the Neponset at Unquity was built by Israel Stoughton at the same time as his mill. In 1635 a ferry was operated for a year or two at the mouth of the river from today's Commercial Point. Three years later Bray Wilkins was licensed to build an inn and operate a ferry at a point about halfway between the present Neponset and Granite Avenue bridges. The charge was a penny a person, but the undertaking was not a success. The record tells us that in 1652 the bridge at Unquity was gone, but that the ford was a good one, passable for both horses and carts. Four years later a new bridge was built, a little downstream from and more oblique than that of today, and this structure lasted for a hundred and nine years. Until well into the 1700's this was the only bridge across the Neponset, although there was a ford at today's Mattapan.¹²

It is difficult to determine just how the land was allotted to the settlers. Members of the original company were entitled to certain specific amounts based upon their investment and the size of their families. Later comers to Dorchester seem to have had land meted out to them in accordance with their ability to utilize it properly. The early Dorchester records are full of grants of relatively small pieces of land, usually only a few acres in size. Additional land sometimes was apportioned in relation to the taxes paid. Before Milton became a separate town all the land, except for the four hundred acres reserved for the support of the Church, had been allocated to individuals and in many cases already subdivided and sold. A very old map of the land grants in the eastern portions of Milton as they existed at an early but indeterminate date was discovered in 1838 by Edmund J. Baker. I include a copy of it to which I have added the names of a few later owners and have

12. Mattapan originally was the Indian place name for the area between Savin Hill and South Boston Neck.

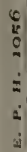
Drawn by John Oliver probably about 1645
 Copied by Joshua Fisher 1661
 Traced by Edmund J. Baker 1838
 Redrawn by E. P. Hamilton 1956

All heavy lines from original map.

Later owners added by E. P. H.: (John Gild)

but modern roads shown thus

are approximately sketched in to give bearings.



The Story of the Town

sketched in a road net so that one can better visualize and locate the various grants.

In 1636 John Glover secured thirty acres in the general area just south of Turner's Pond and soon added many more. He was a man of very considerable wealth and high standing in Dorchester. On this land he established a farm, which may have been only pasturage for his cattle.¹³ When he died in 1653 the farm was operated by Nicholas Wood, who in 1638 had been one of the herders of the Dorchester cows. The cowherds, between the middle of April and November, would blow their horns at five in the morning, starting at a designated point and working towards the pasture. The settlers would bring out their cows, and the cowherds would shoo them into the herd, and drive all on to the pasture. At night the herd would be brought back, and each would collect his own cattle. The Dorchester settlers paid an annual fee of a bit over five shillings per cow for this service.

It is evident from the early records that the cattle were a very important part of the economy. In 1634 it was reported that the estimated four thousand population of the entire Bay area possessed fifteen hundred head of cattle, besides four thousand goats and innumerable swine. The native grasses, except for the excellent salt hay of the tidal marshes, were not good for fodder, but English grass was imported and spread rapidly, and the cattle multiplied and flourished. The first cattle brought over were, I think, the red Devons, but as early as about 1635 some cows arrived from the Netherlands. Danish cattle were sent to New Hampshire at about the same period, and may well also have come here.

The Dorchester herd that was under the charge of the cowherds then numbered about one hundred and twenty, and four hundred and eighty acres were allowed as pasturage for them. By 1652 the herd of cows and oxen had grown to four hundred and fifty, but some were probably pastured on home lots rather than being driven out with the herd. At this time the pastures were across the Neponset at Unquity, those for the oxen just south of the river at Mattapan, where the ox pens were, and those for the cows farther down the river in the Eliot Street-Central Avenue area.

13. At the time of Glover's death 8 oxen, 2 horses and 3 cows were all the livestock on this farm.

History of Milton

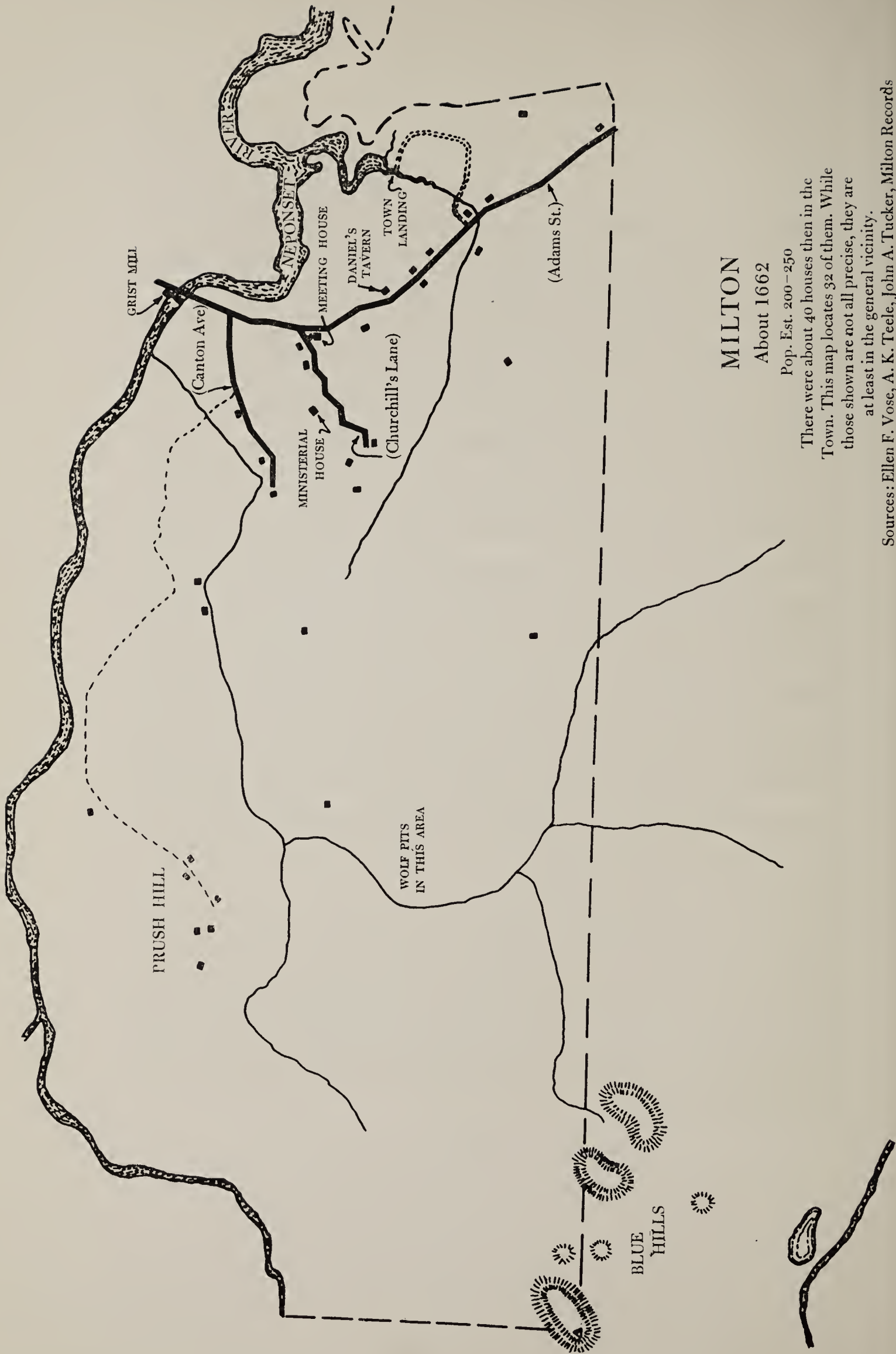
The early Dorchester records contain many references to fences, both on private and on common lands. In 1633 a post fence was prescribed with double rails mortised into posts not over ten feet apart. Fences were to be provided by the owners of the cattle at the rate of twenty feet of fence for each cow owned. Another early order required that the posts should be six feet long, but this probably included the buried portion, for a later rule said that the fence must be at least four feet high. Another interesting note in connection with the cattle was the marking of certain large trees with an "S", which meant that they could not be cut, but were to be preserved to furnish shade for the cows in summer.

A road was laid out over Milton Hill in 1654 from Braintree (Quincy) to Dorchester and on to Roxbury. South of the Neponset this followed the line of the old trail and an earlier road which had existed well before this date, at least as far as the Braintree line. All of the first settlement at Unquity was along this trail, and most of it was close to Algerine Corner. By 1650 there were at least eight or nine houses south of the river, but the greater part of the present area of Milton was still largely wilderness, except for the cultivated Indian Fields and the cattle pastures along the south side of the Neponset. A number of settlers were farmers who worked holdings of absentee landlords, but others owned their land and bore names that would long remain in Milton, such as Badcock, Vose, Gill, Gulliver, and Swift. Unquity at this time was only another sparsely settled part of the great township of Dorchester, with no Church, no school, and no entity of its own. Much water would flow by Neponset Mill before Milton was ready to become a town.

1662

Milton had been settled for almost a generation, yet there was still very little of it. Most of the houses were south of Milton Hill along the rough roadway that became Adams Street. The clapboarded Meeting House with its thatched roof stood near the crest at the point where Churchill's Lane led down into the hollow in which Brook Road now runs, and on uphill again to the vicinity of the cemetery, where two or three farmhouses then stood. What we now call Canton Avenue followed its present course down to Turner's Pond and the large farm of the late John Glover of Dorchester, then recently purchased by Robert Vose. Another house or two existed in the general vicinity. The road seems to have ended about here, but some sort of a cartway extended on to the house of Andrew Pitcher, who lived on the north corner of today's Canton Avenue and Thacher Street. There was probably some rough roadway from here on up the line of Highland Street, for the first of the Wadsworths had his farm on the southeasterly slope of the hill, well away from any other house. Several farms had been started up on Brush Hill, far from the more settled part of the town. At the crossing of the Neponset there was the little grist mill on the Dorchester side, with the miller's house, but nothing else, I believe, as the settlements in Dorchester were still somewhat to the north at this date. At the east end of town a cartway swung down into the marsh near Gulliver's Creek where the landing place then was. Another landing had already been established just below the grist mill, but on the Milton side of the Neponset.

By this time the Neponset Indians had been moved to the Ponkapoag Reservation, but there were probably a few stragglers camped near the lower falls, at least part of the year, and others were employed as servants or farm hands. Since the Pequot War of almost a generation before, there had been no Indian disturbances, and the possibility was far from anyone's mind, hence there was no hesitancy in occupying scattered farms in the more western parts of the town.



MILTON

About 1662

Pop. Est. 200-250

There were about 40 houses then in the Town. This map locates 32 of them. While those shown are not all precise, they are at least in the general vicinity.

Sources: Ellen F. Vose, A. K. Teele, John A. Tucker, Milton Records
EP. H. Feb. 1954

The Story of the Town

Except for some building of scows and shallops in Gulliver's Creek, and perhaps a little fishing in Boston Bay, the sole occupation of all the inhabitants was farming. William Daniels was probably keeping a tavern on the north side of Adams Street a little way up the hill from Algerine Corner; he certainly was a few years later.¹ That is all that Milton was at this time, a little hamlet on the road between Boston and the Plymouth Colony, with a few families engaged in simple farming.

We know relatively little about the life of this period, and the Town records are very scanty. We do know that the Meeting House had been built a few years previously, and at about this time or a little later there was a parsonage slightly north of Brook Road and about halfway between Churchill's Lane and today's Randolph Avenue. Despite this, there was no formally organized Church, nor would there be one for many years to come, a most unusual omission, and one which it is surprising that the General Court overlooked. There were, however, various temporary preachers, and a couple of more permanent ones, who were never ordained because no formal Church existed.

I think it very likely that the Dorchester herd of cows and oxen were still pastured in the Central Avenue-Mattapan area—certainly there was no Milton settlement near there to object. If we were able to go back and wander around the town, we would have seen scattered here and there one or more unpainted clapboarded farmhouses, usually with two stories and a central chimney, and each with some sort of barn² and outhouses. Some of the older and cruder dwellings probably had thatched roofs, but the newer houses were shingled. The fences mostly would have been made of wooden rails set in posts, and we would have seen squealing pigs running around loose, with wooden board yokes around their necks, if it was late spring, summer, or early fall. These were designed to prevent them from grubbing and rooting among the crops. Many of them would also have had large iron rings in their noses put there for the same purpose. A considerable part of the town con-

1. In 1678 Daniels was licensed to sell beer, cider and wine, but not "strong water".

2. The barns were more what we today would call sheds. Examples are recorded which were in one case twenty feet square, in another twenty by twenty-four.

History of Milton

sisted of the old Indian fields, open pasture land. In parts of this we would have seen flocks of sheep tended by shepherds, and also herds of cows, as well as a number of hobbled horses. Other such animals would be free and unattended in fields enclosed in wooden fences. Stone walls would come later as more fields were cleared.

At night we would often hear the wolves howling up in the Blue Hills, but this would not particularly disturb us as we were accustomed to them, and knew that they were cowards at heart. If it happened to be summer, we would note that the fields were covered with barley, rye, and Indian corn, principally the latter. We would have seen many pea vines, as well as most of the common vegetables with which we are familiar today. There of course would be some orchards of fruit trees, but probably still fairly young. In short, it was mostly a fairly open countryside, with a number of prosperous farms, comfortable, and yet not very far removed from the frontier stage, but with plenty to eat, and a little time to sit down and look around at what had been accomplished.

There is no record at all to tell us how large the settlement was, but from a count of the families then in the town, and of the old houses which are known to have existed by this period, I believe that there were about two score dwellings and perhaps two hundred and fifty inhabitants.

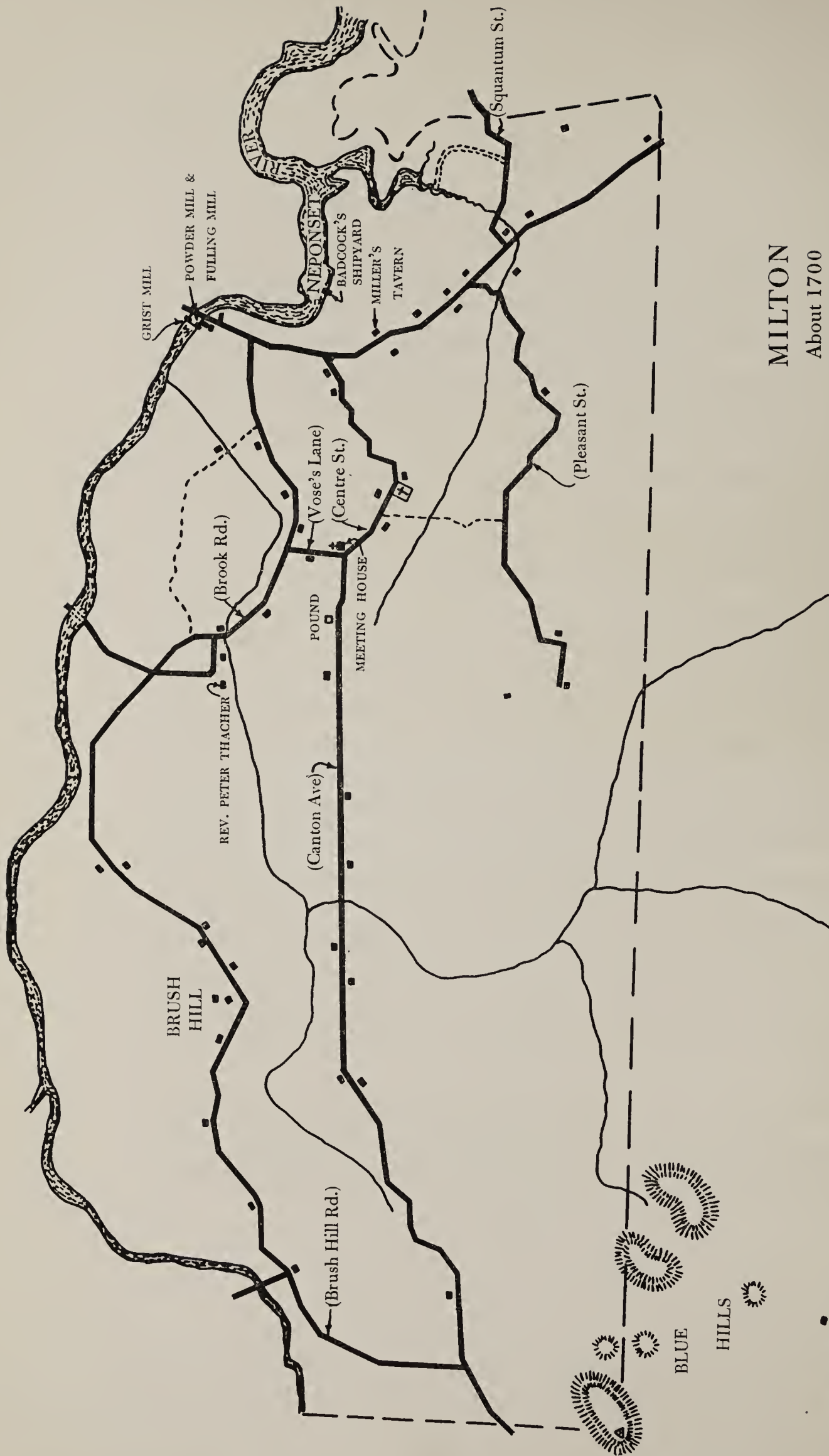
The town in those days was smaller in area than it is now. The southeasterly boundary was then a line from the present limits in East Milton to the top of Great Blue Hill. This excluded all the present Hillside Street area, which was added in 1712, and the land around Houghton's Pond, annexed in 1754. Milton's bounds in those days included that part of today's Hyde Park which lies east of the Neponset. It was ceded to the then Town of Hyde Park in 1868.

1700

During the previous third of a century Milton increased considerably in size, nearly doubling in population. The road net grew materially, Brush Hill Road and most of Canton Avenue appeared, while Pleasant Street now extended from Algerine Corner to the southern end of Highland Street. A new Meeting House had been built at the Centre Street end of Vose's Lane, and Rev. Peter Thacher had moved from the old parsonage to his own house near our present Thacher Street at Pine Tree Brook. The Cemetery was at its present location, but of course very much smaller than it is today. The old Meeting House on Adams Street was now a schoolhouse, and there was a second one for the children of the western part of the town, probably situated on Brush Hill Road near the head of Robbins Street. More farms had appeared on Brush Hill, and there were now others on Canton Avenue beyond Pine Tree Brook. Today's Canton Avenue, then probably called the Taunton Road, extended south beyond the Blue Hills to the town line, where it connected with the road to Stoughton. At the lower falls of the Neponset, the powder mill, a fulling mill, and a small house or two initiated the growth of Milton Village, but there was nothing else there, no tavern or store. The first farm appears south of the Blue Hills near Houghton's Pond.

The growth during the previous forty years was perhaps not quite as much as one would expect. At least a partial explanation for this was King Philip's War, which drove the frontier back to the very borders of Milton, and put a damper on expansion of the settlements for some little time to come. The Punkapoag Indians all remained loyal, but howling savages from the south and west got unpleasantly close to the outskirts of the town. The cost of this War, both in blood and in money, set New England back many a long year.

We know a great deal more of the life and times of this period, although the Town records are still far from satisfactory. A formal Church had been established in 1678, and Rev. Peter Thacher was ordained as its minister.



MILTON

About 1700

Pop. Est. 350-400

There were about 64 houses then in the Town. This map locates 51 of them. While those shown are not all precise, they are at least in the general vicinity.

Sources: 1700 Tax List, Ellen F. Vose, A. K. Teele, John A. Tucker

The Story of the Town

He kept a detailed diary for the first few years that he was in town, a most interesting manuscript which goes quite a way in preserving a little of the life of the period. Milton was now a well-established country community, relatively small in size, but in a favorable location on a main artery of travel, with good landings and wharves on tidal waters, and within easy distance of the capital of the Province. Roads must have been relatively passable, for Mr. Thacher thought nothing of going to Boston and returning the same day, and he frequently visited Dedham and Weymouth.



ROBERT TUCKER HOUSE

The oldest house still standing in Milton, it represents the second and more ambitious type of house construction.

The Tuckers had arrived in town. Robert, who built what is the oldest house still standing, had settled on Brush Hill Road at Robbins Street, and the family was soon going to spread out all over that district and to the south of Hillside Street. The first Davenport was to come to Milton in a very few years, and eventually almost every inhabitant of the western part of the town who was not a Tucker would seem to have been a Davenport. Voses were commencing to do their share in populating Milton, and Adamses, Ruggles, Clapps, Crehores, Blakes, Swifts, Houghtons and Cranes were here, not to forget Sumners, Pierces and Fennos.

Old men were now alive who had been born south of the Neponset, and

History of Milton

Milton was an old established town. I was about to write village, but that is just what it was not, as it was an area of scattered farms, and had no central training field with its Meeting House and a group of dwellings such as we would expect. The most densely settled part was still around Algerine Corner, near which was John Daniels' tavern, but even this was not really a village, just a scattering of farm houses along a country road. The Meeting House was now at a convenient centralized location, but there were few dwellings in its vicinity.

The people were hard-working farmers, but there was time for a little play. There are records of parties going up into the Blue Hills on picnics, or on a boat trip down the harbor to visit Capt. Clapp, and see the fort at Castle Island which he commanded. One visited around with the neighbors, and a group sometimes dropped in of an evening on Rev. Peter Thacher and sang psalms, or listened to him play his "bull fiddle" (viola da gamba).¹ Mrs. Thacher probably produced some currant wine as the evening drew to an end, and Mr. Thacher may even have taken one or two of the older men into his study and given them a little glass of the "cordial water" which he had distilled in his alembic, while they talked over serious Town or Church matters.

The great relaxation and recreation, of course, was the Sunday trip to the Meeting House, where one met people from all over town, and picked up the latest gossip and scandal, talked crops and politics, and perhaps did a little courting between sermons.

We have by this time a well-established farming community, complete with schools and Church. There now probably was some tavern in the western part of the town, but the taverns were still primarily for travellers. There is no record of any store, but Boston was not far, and it is possible that both Braintree and Dorchester might then have had a shop or two. There was a blacksmith, Stephen Kinsley, somewhere in the vicinity of Milton Hill, perhaps near Algerine Corner, but his exact location is unknown.

Stone walls had, at least partly, replaced the older wooden fences, and a

1. This was quite an unusual thing, as most of the Puritan ministers of this period strongly disapproved of any sort of instrumental music.

The Story of the Town

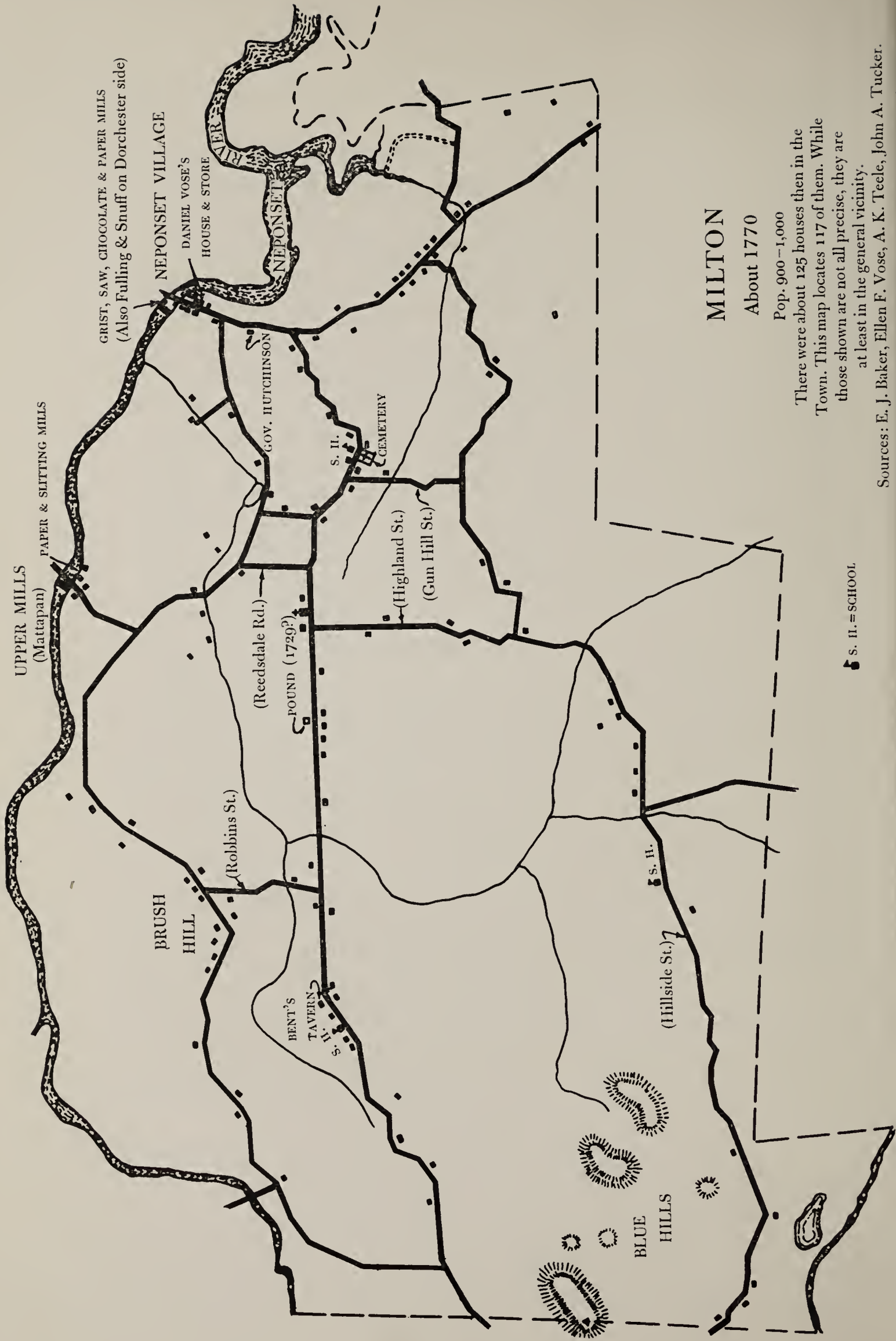
pound for strayed cattle and "horsbes" had been built on Canton Avenue directly opposite the present Library.

Traffic to and from the South Shore, Plymouth, and the Cape must have made Adams Street quite an active thoroughfare in those days, and down in the Neponset marshes under the bluff of Milton Hill the Badcocks were building ships of real size. As you crossed the bridge over the Neponset you would have heard the clack of the grist mill, and the thumping of the fulling mill over the sound of the falling waters. Just what kind of a noise the powder mill made I am not prepared to say.

Town government had developed into something approaching its final shape, and, had we attended Town Meeting, we would have easily recognized much of our present form and practice. When the Constable came around to collect our taxes we would have probably tried to pay them all in the form of dried peas, Indian corn, and barley, while he would have insisted on a third of it in hard money. If it was Mr. Thacher's rate which he was collecting, he would probably have asked us to bring it to the parsonage, but if it was a Town or County rate, we would have dumped the produce into his cart.

Daniel Thomas Vose Huntoon, in his *History of Canton*, gives two little stories that are worth including here, even if they are not directly concerned with Milton. At about this period Edward Pitcher, son of Samuel, who late in life moved from Milton to Stoughton, fell into a wolf pit and found a wolf there ahead of him! This same Pitcher was troubled by a disappearance of some of his vegetables, so he dug a pit and carefully concealed its opening. The next morning he found it occupied by one of his neighbors, who ever afterward was nicknamed "Pitcher's Wolf".

There is no record of the population of the town in 1700, but from a study of the tax lists and of the houses known to have existed, I estimate it at a little under four hundred, living in some three score dwellings.



MILTON

About 1770

Pop. 900-1,000

There were about 125 houses then in the Town. This map locates 117 of them. While those shown are not all precise, they are at least in the general vicinity.

Sources: E. J. Baker, Ellen F. Vose, A. K. Teele, John A. Tucker.

1770

During the two generations since 1700, Milton had a considerable growth and the first village appeared. The most important change in the road net was the extension of Hillside Street out beyond Houghton's Pond, the growth of the paths which are now Gun Hill Street and Highland Street into roads, and the construction of Robbins Street. That part of today's Reedsdale Road between Central Avenue and Canton Avenue had also made its appearance.

The Meeting House had stood at Vose's Lane and Centre Street for many years, but in 1719-20¹ it was proposed to move it up to the vicinity of the present Town Hall. The scanty records show that there was a tremendous squabble at the March Town Meeting of 1719-20. It was voted not to build on Nathaniel Pitcher's land, not to build on Church land, not to choose a committee to decide where the house should be, not to petition the General Court to determine the site, and not to put it on neighbor Trott's land! Altogether it sounds as if Town Meeting had gotten itself into a thoroughly cantankerous frame of mind. At a meeting two months later it was decided to put the matter up to the General Court. It would appear that this body ducked the issue, and in January of 1720-21 it was voted to elect a Town committee by written vote, an unusual action, to treat with Nathaniel Pitcher about a site on his land. Some months later it was found that he could not give a good title, and in August attempts were again made to get the General Court into the row, and to approve a location near today's Wendell Park. Twenty-seven prominent citizens, including four women, disapproved of this location so strongly that they asked to have their names recorded, an extraordinary procedure. Next year a site on Ensign Samuel Swift's land was turned down. Then the whole matter appears to have been dropped for some time, until at last in 1727 it was decided to build on the approximate

1. Until 1750 the new year was considered to start with April and a date falling in Jan., Feb., or Mar. was written with both years.

History of Milton

site of the present Unitarian Church. Surely we may say that much time and thought was given to selecting the location where our civic center stands today.

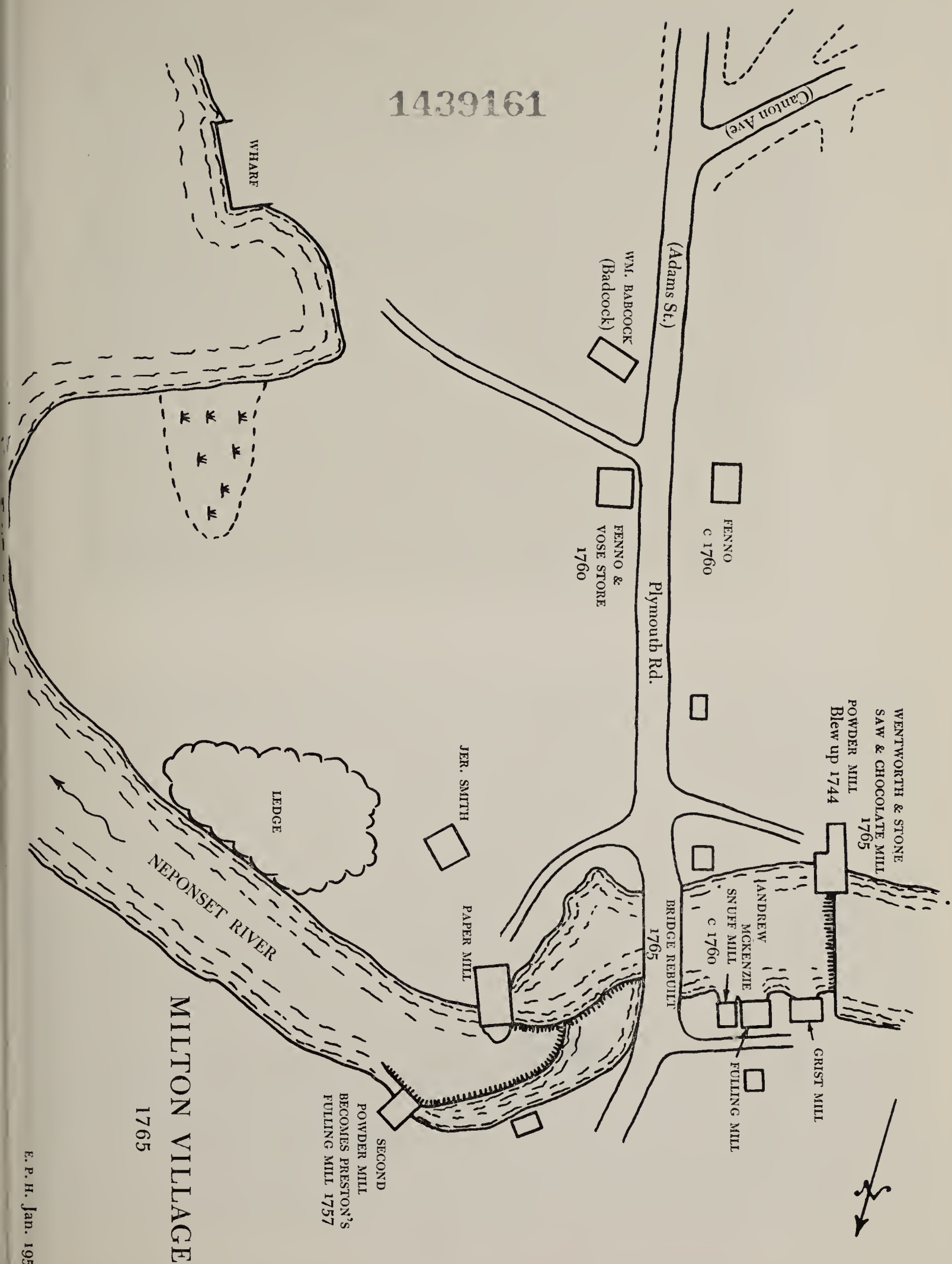
During this period Milton Village came into being. At the start of the century there seems to have been nothing on the Milton side except the powder mill and a fulling mill, with perhaps a cottage or two. In 1706 Rev. Joseph Belcher of Dedham received the Town's permission to build a sawmill on the Milton side east of the Plymouth Road. In 1728 this mill had paper-making machinery installed in it, and a house for the foreman was built nearby. Within a year or two William Badcock, son of Enoch, and the second shipbuilder of that name, put up a house where the steps go down to the present parking space on Wharf Lane. Before many years had passed this house had become an inn.

A prominent citizen of Milton now makes his first appearance, Daniel Vose, son of Capt. Thomas Vose, who lived on Canton Avenue near Ather-ton Street. In 1760 at the age of nineteen he formed a partnership with his cousin Joseph Fenno, bought a piece of land on the site of the present Associates Building, and started a store. Next year Fenno married a Dorchester Robinson, and built the house now standing just south of the Jenney Gasoline Station. Within a very few years Fenno was drowned in the Neponset, and Vose bought his share in the partnership. By this time Vose had married Rachel, daughter of Jeremiah Smith, who owned the paper mill. Over the period up to the outbreak of the Revolution he built up a very prosperous business, wholesale to a considerable extent, and became a leading citizen of the town. Thus we find commerce being introduced into the Village where industry had already existed, and Milton acquired a healthy little center which was to show considerable further growth.

In other parts of the town there had been a steady spreading out of new farms. In 1700 there had been no settlement in the Hillside Street area, but a considerable number of farms and a schoolhouse have now appeared there. The old records always refer to this as "Scotch Woods",² and it was only in

2. The derivation of this name has never been satisfactorily solved despite various suggestions and theories.

1439161



History of Milton



comparatively recent times that it came to be written "Scott's Woods". A glance at the map of this period will show that most of the town, except for the Blue Hills themselves, and the swampy flood plain of Pine Tree Brook, was now well covered by farms, the houses lying along the roads, and the fields, pastures, and wood lots extending back to the rear. A little industrial settlement had grown up at Mattapan, but it was very small.

A new element was first introduced during these years, the summer resident. Early in the eighteenth century some wealthy Bostonians decided that a place in the country would be very pleasant in summer. The first of these came originally perhaps as much for business as for pleasure. Jonathan Jackson, a wealthy merchant, built the slitting mill at Mattapan, and also a large house on the other side of the road, where he could live in summer and at the same time keep an eye on his mill.

Governor Jonathan Belcher was born in Cambridge, became a successful



BADLAM MIRROR

This painting, supposed to have been made by Gen. Badlam, shows part of Milton Village just before 1800. The view is south and east and Milton Hill should (but does not) show in the background. In center foreground on the Dorchester side is shown the first fire engine house, while beyond it at the extreme left is the old paper mill. One of the small buildings in center background is Daniel Vose's distillery, and under the arch appears John Lillie's shop.



1774 POUND

The Story of the Town

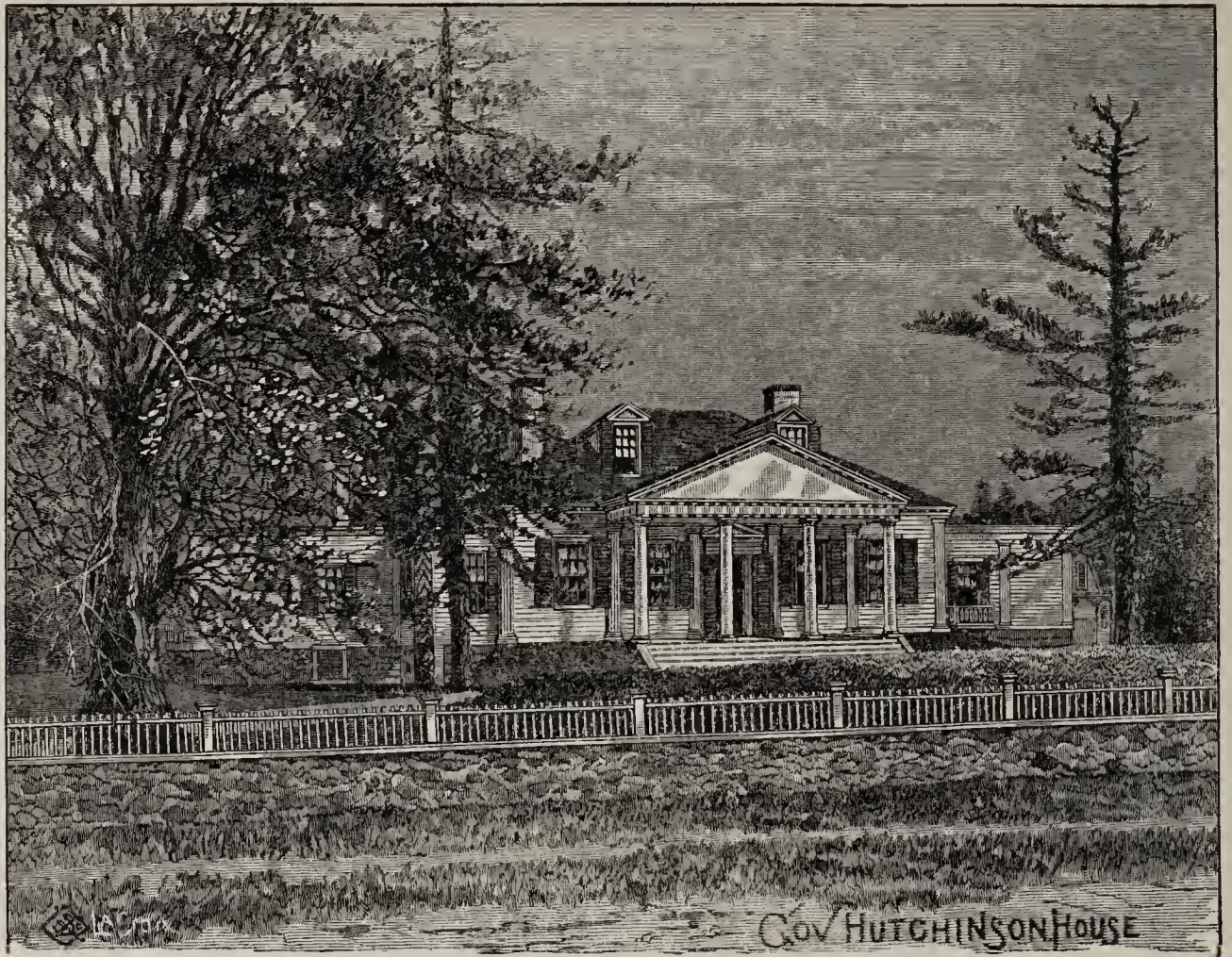
merchant and politician, and eventually was commissioned Governor of Massachusetts, taking office in 1730. About this same time he bought land east of Algerine Corner on the south side of Adams Street. The old Holman house was on his land, and he used it as a summer place for a number of years, meanwhile planning to erect a more imposing mansion house. He built an avenue to the site of the proposed new house. Dr. Teele says that the road construction was done by Provincial troops, a regiment working for a week and then being relieved by another, but I think this very improbable. Provincial regiments existed only on paper in those days, and it is hard to imagine an independent New England militiaman working as a laborer for the personal benefit of a governor. Today's Governor's Road may or may not have been built along the line of this avenue, but it certainly was named after Governor Belcher. He was later appointed Governor of New Jersey, and died there in 1757. His widow returned to Milton, and lived in the old Holman house until it burned in January 1776. The house was soon rebuilt and today still stands at 401 Adams Street.

William Foye, Treasurer of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, was a nephew of Governor Belcher. In 1733 he bought the old John Daniels Tavern on Adams Street, tore it down, and put up a large house which he used as a summer residence. Nine years later Thomas Hutchinson, then a wealthy merchant, active in the service of the Province, built a modest summer place at the top of Milton Hill, where for many years he passed his summers, and by the outbreak of the Revolution his winters as well.

Foye died before the Revolution, but his widow continued to live in the house. She moved to Stoughton during the war, but returned afterwards to Milton. Gov. Hutchinson's house was sold by Massachusetts, passed through various hands and eventually was torn down some ten years ago, by which time it had undergone extensive alterations.

We may summarize by saying that by 1770 Milton had become a fairly large and prosperous town, mostly agricultural, but with important industrial developments at Mattapan and at the Lower Falls, and an active commercial and shipping undertaking centered around Daniel Vose's store and wharf in Milton Village. A few wealthy summer residents had made their

History of Milton



appearance, but the Revolution would put a stop to them, and it would be many years before they were to appear again on the scene. The first census of Milton that we have was taken in 1765, and showed seven hundred and forty-three inhabitants, and there were twelve hundred and thirteen only eleven years later. In 1770 my estimate would be a little under a thousand souls living in some one hundred and twenty-five houses.

A property census made in 1761 for purposes of establishing taxes showed the town to have the following:

115½ dwelling houses
54 ft. of wharf
1 grist mill

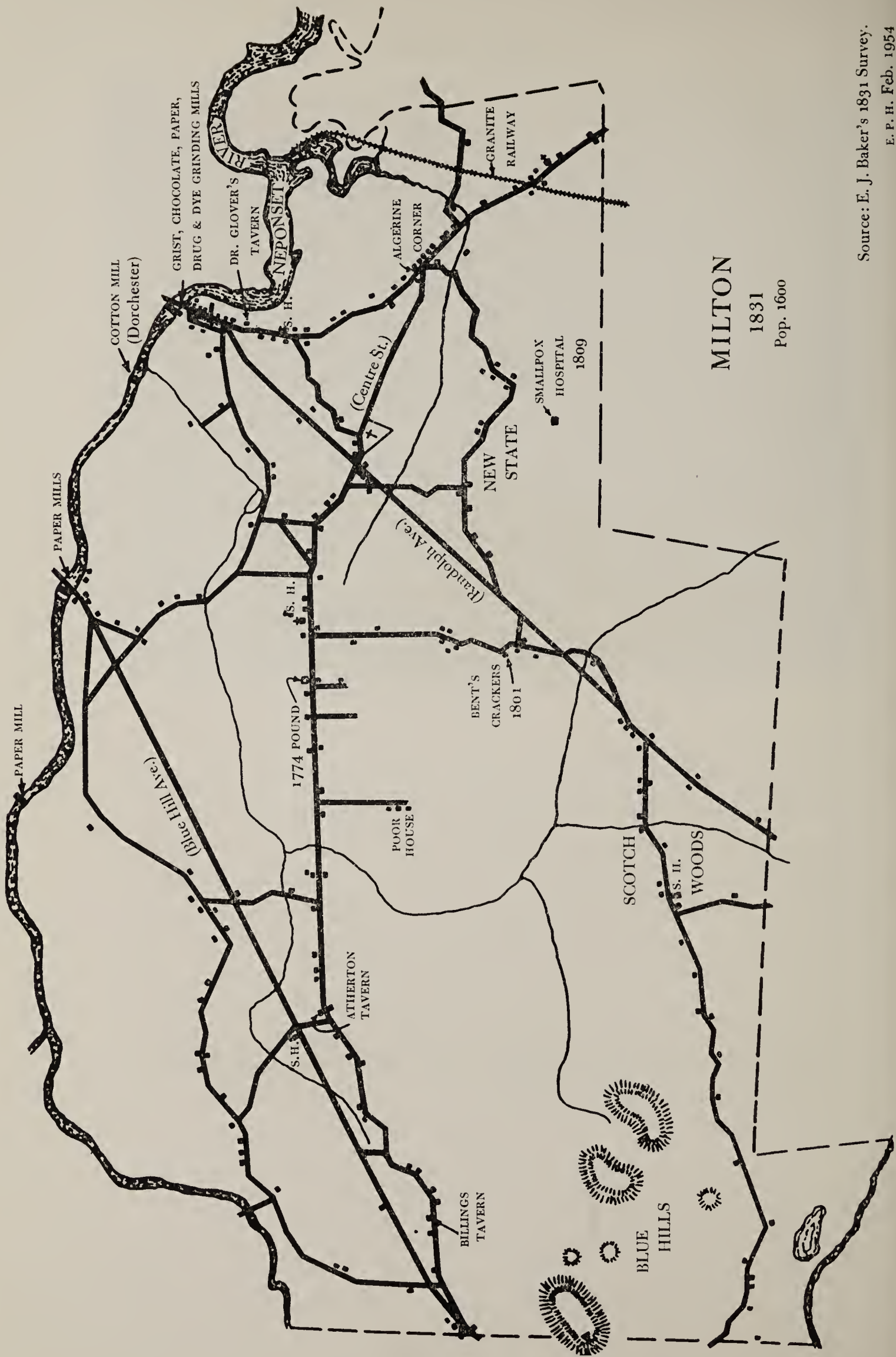
36 tons of shipping
£667 stock in trade
£5148 money loaned out at interest

The Story of the Town

439 cow pastures (acres?)	179 horses
5635 bushels of grain	176 oxen
1660 barrels of cider	388 cows
934 tons of hay	1359 sheep
14 slaves ³	42 hogs



3. It is impossible to say just how common slaves were in Milton. Between 1695 and 1761 I have found records of at least 21 different Negro slaves. Samuel Miller at the time of his death in 1761 owned five.



MILTON

1831

Pop. 1600

1831

For the first time we have an exact map showing all roads and houses, as well as the names of the householders. This map, which also includes the Town of Dorchester, was made by Edmund J. Baker, a leading citizen of Neponset Village. The major change in the road net is the appearance of two turnpikes, Blue Hill Avenue and Randolph Avenue. The Quincy quarries and the Bunker Hill Monument have produced the first railway in America, the horse-drawn Granite Railway, and Railway Village came into being at the point where Adams Street was crossed. The other physical changes were the increase in the number of farms, many of which were now producing for the Boston markets rather than for their own subsistence, the further utilization of the water power of the Neponset, and the growth of Neponset Village into a considerable little settlement, complete with shops and other local activities. The Milton Post Office had arrived in about 1803 with Dr. Samuel Glover in charge, and had been located in several places in the Village. General Whitney had been postmaster for a dozen years, with the office in the old Rising Sun Tavern on the corner of Adams Street and Canton Avenue. In 1831 Nathan C. Martin kept the post office in his store, which was immediately north of the present MTA tracks on the east side of Adams Street.

For some unknown reason there was a busy little industry in Milton producing ship biscuits, or water crackers. Samuel Tucker at this time had a bakery on Hillside Street, as did Artemus Kennedy. Bent and Company were established in 1801 with a bakery located on Highland Street. Sometime toward the end of the last century the business was moved to Pleasant Street near Randolph Avenue, where it still continues to produce the old-fashioned water cracker. A little after 1831 there were also other cracker bakeries near Hillside Street, at Algerine Corner, and in the Village.

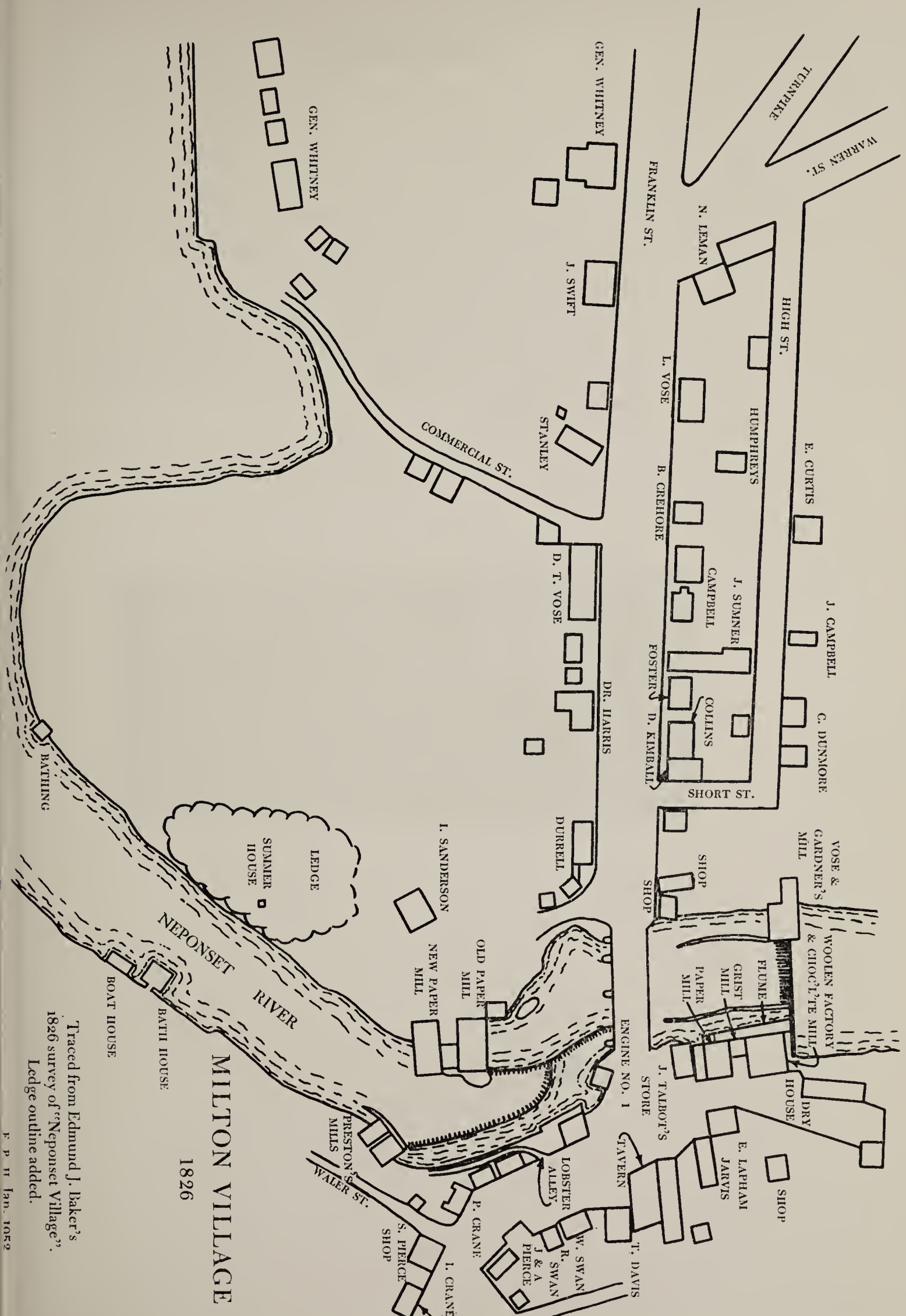
At this period Milton could be considered a typical New England town, composed largely of farmers, but with an industrial development of some

History of Milton

size, and a number of local men of wealth, such as Asaph Churchill, Caleb Hobart, Dr. Amos Holbrook, Squire Nathaniel Tucker, and Gen. Moses Whitney. By this time there were again beginning to be a few summer visitors who boarded at some of the houses in town, but the period of summer places was still a number of years in the future. The first Forbes house on Milton Hill, however, was built just before 1831 as a summer place, but the family could hardly be considered summer residents, as their roots in Milton even at that time went back for seventy years or more.

Milton in the 1830's must have been much like any other prosperous New England town of fair size, with its interests still almost entirely local, and its activities divided between agriculture, industry, and commerce. Although it was most convenient to Boston, its life still centered within itself. Milton Village and Dorchester Lower Mills still constituted one community, and various social and intellectual activities on either side of the river were mutually enjoyed. Dorchester Lower Mills was a similar country village which served as the center for a considerable farming district north of the Neponset.

There was still but one Church in the Town, but it was about to split apart amidst bitter recriminations, and within a very few years the Town would be barred from holding Town Meeting in the Meeting House which it had built. The temperance movement was just beginning to make progress. A little before the Revolution the Town had gone on record in a protest against any tax being placed on rum, but times were changing and soon the Town would feel differently. In 1819 the Warrant included an article "To see what measures the town will take to suppress intemperence", and the Selectmen and the Overseers of the Poor were directed by Town Meeting to visit all taverns and retailers of liquor to make certain that the laws were observed, and they were also directed to search out all habitual drunkards, and to try to prevent excessive drinking. A few years before, a Milton woman had asked to be relieved of her husband, who was "considered an idle disorderly lewd person given to intemperence if not a common drunkard", and the Overseers of the Poor were directed to take him into custody. The Town Meeting of 1834 went still farther, and directed the Selectmen "not to give their approbation to any Retailer to sell ardent spirits", yet only four



MILTON VILLAGE
1826

Traced from Edmund J. Baker's
1826 survey of "Neponset Village".
Ledger outline added.

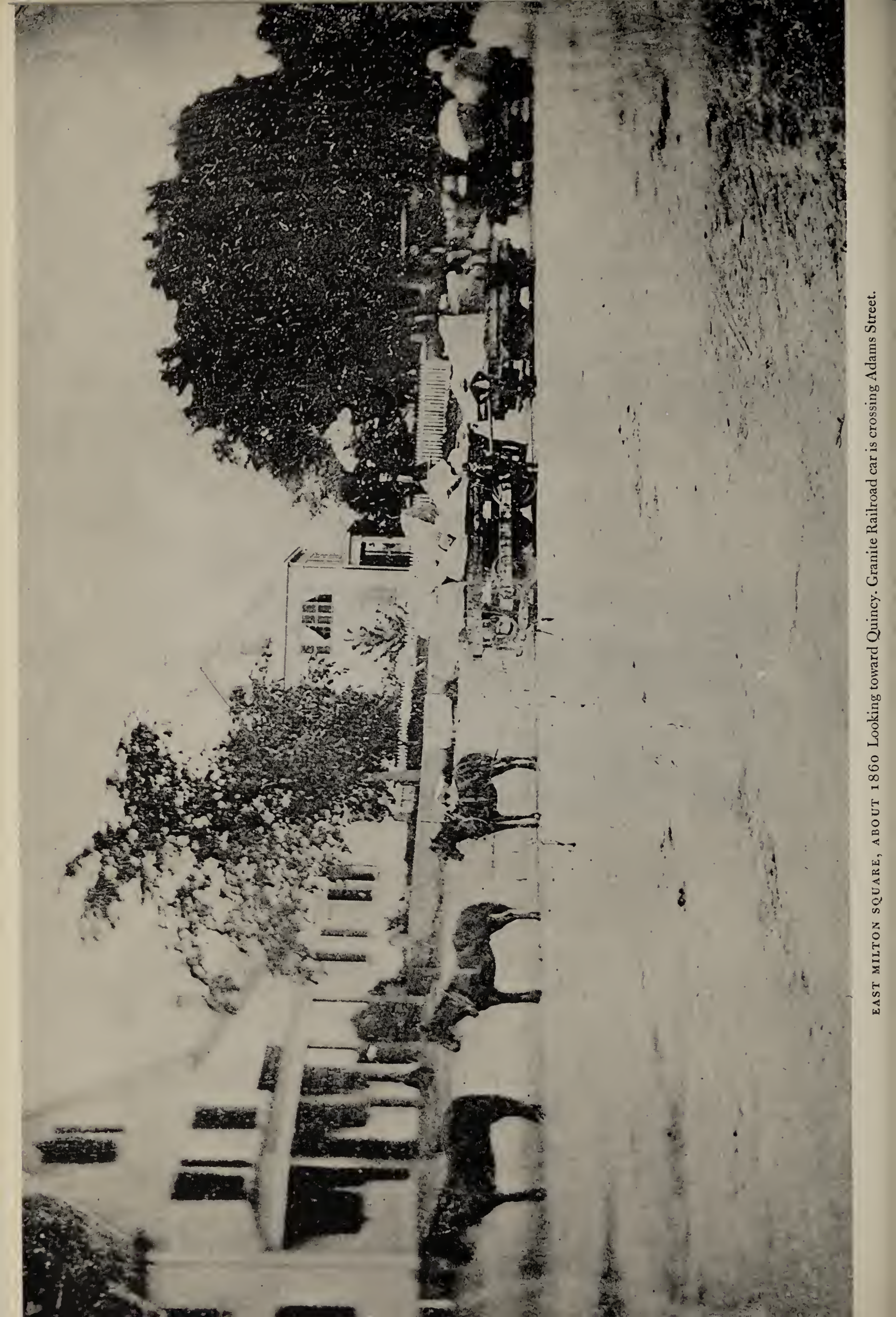
History of Milton

years later it directed that the paupers be given rum when they worked.

Two interesting little items of about this period have survived. Dunmore's stage in those days left the Village every morning at about eight o'clock, and returned in the afternoon. It was the only public conveyance to Boston. Mr. Beal, the milkman, was a kind and obliging soul who often helped people by carrying their mail from and to the post office in the Village while he drove his milk cart from house to house in his daily round.

I think that we may say that Milton of this period was a normal and prosperous New England town which was standing on the threshold of becoming a suburb of a great city. The population was sixteen hundred, living in about two hundred dwellings.





EAST MILTON SQUARE, ABOUT 1860 Looking toward Quincy. Granite Railroad car is crossing Adams Street.

1857

Milton in the years just before the Civil War was not very different from what it had been a quarter century earlier, but a new era in the development of the town was just commencing. Probably the greatest single change was the arrival of the railroad in 1847. One could now in a short half hour or so be whisked from the Village to a point a little south of today's South Station, and commuting to work in Boston became simple and practical. The other major factor which was now starting to make its appearance was the summer resident. Additional houses belonging to the Forbes family were built on Adams Street, while Eustises and a Wolcott now had places near Blue Hill. Benjamin Rotch, recently moved to Boston from New Bedford and its whaling interests, and married to the daughter of the merchant prince Abbot Lawrence, had bought many acres near today's Blue Hills Parkway and Canton Avenue, and was establishing one of the early experiments in scientific farming. Jointly with Thomas Motley, who had a farm at Forest Hills, Mr. Rotch introduced the first Jersey cattle to this country.

The town itself had not changed much physically, except that East Milton had shown very considerable growth. Whereas in 1831 it consisted of only a church, a tavern, and some half-dozen dwellings, it now boasted two churches, two stores, and about forty-four houses. Moreover it was tending somewhat to become a separate village with a social life of its own. The Granite Railway still was running, and the rail connection with Boston would not come for another dozen years.

At the other end of town on the northwesterly slope of Brush Hill, a land company had recently developed a district called Fairmount, which already contained some two dozen houses and a school. In 1868 this area would become part of the Town of Hyde Park.

Near the junction of Canton Avenue and today's Blue Hills Parkway, then called Mattapan Street and stretching without a single house along it from Canton Avenue to Brook Road, there was another little hamlet. It consisted of a store, two or three woodworking shops, and some houses. Before many

History of Milton

years it would be known as Blue Hill and would have a post office of its own.

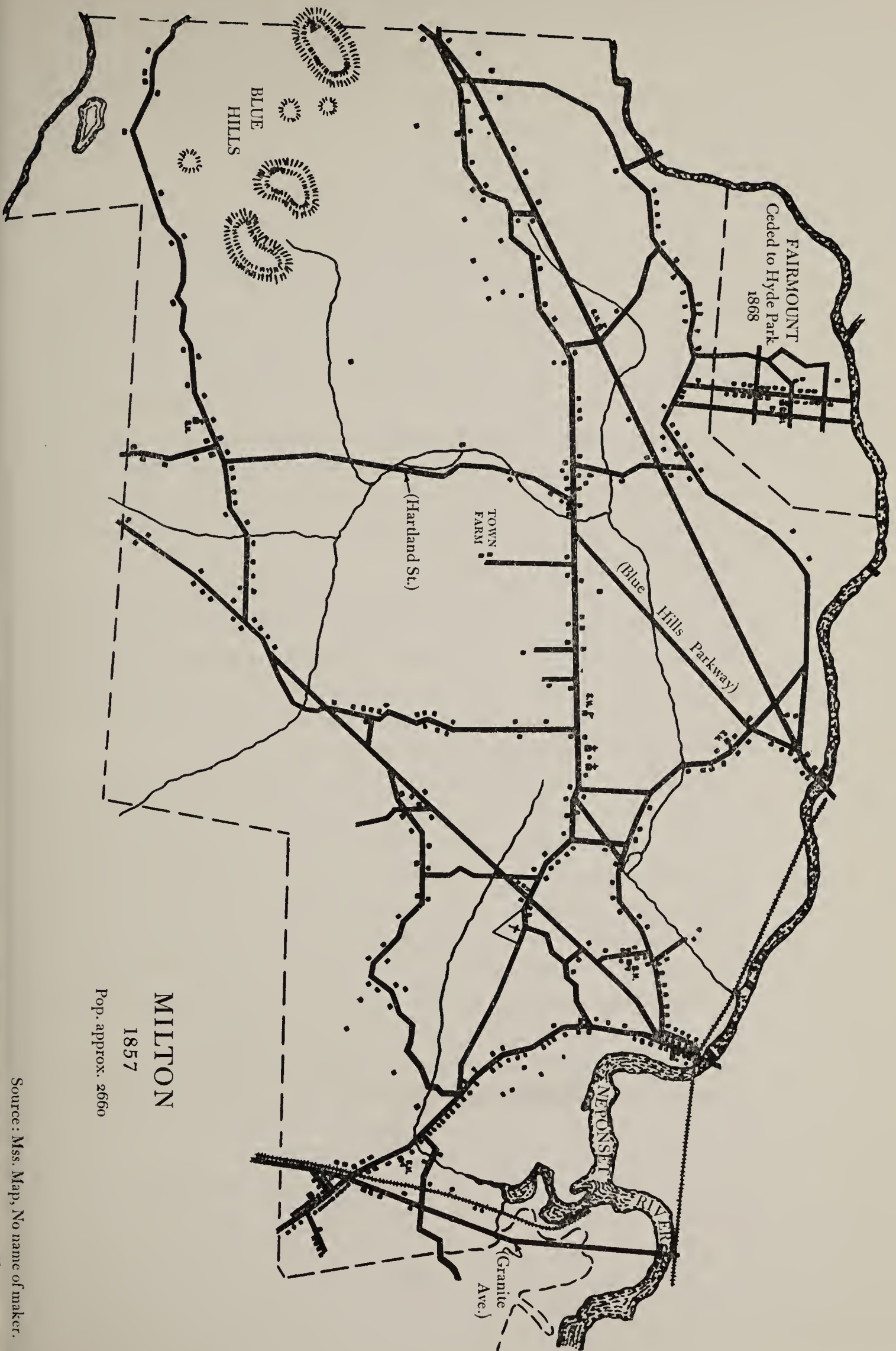
At Mattapan, or Milton Upper Mills, there were a dozen houses scattered around in the vicinity of the paper mill and the fire engine house, but there was neither Eliot Street nor Central Avenue, and all the area from Mattapan to the Village, the old grazing place of the Dorchester cattle, remained farm, pasture, and waste lands, with only a single house where Ruggles Lane crossed Pine Tree Brook.

Milton was still a farming community, and the new influx of wealthy summer residents had as yet had little if any effect upon the life and doings of the town. At the Center, the old Unitarian Church and its new Congregational neighbor flanked the Town House, with the Academy Building in the rear. There was a second Congregational Church in East Milton, but the Old Stone Church then stood unused without any congregation.

So far as I have been able to learn, the life of the town still centered largely within itself, although shopping and visiting trips to Boston must have become more common. In 1856 the Dorchester horsecar line was opened, and a slower but cheaper trip to Boston was thus offered in competition with the railroad. There was as yet no free library, but the "Ladies Circulating Library of Dorchester and Milton" served the Village area until the Town, assisted by private subscriptions, established the Public Library in 1870. There was also an agricultural library operating during this period under the sponsorship of the "Farmers' Club", which appears to have been somewhat short-lived. Various lecturers and speakers came here from time to time, including Abraham Lincoln, who spoke in Richmond Hall on the Dorchester side in 1848. Milton's Nathaniel S. Safford was chairman of the meeting.

In the 1856 election Milton Hill went all out for the new Republican party and Fremont, its candidate for President. There were various illuminations and a torch-light parade over Adams Street.

We may be sure that there were church suppers, occasional balls, and all the other normal social life of a fair-sized New England town, but I have been unable to find much detailed information on this subject. The slavery question agitated the good citizens of Milton, and at least one of them, Edward L. Pierce, was a most determined abolitionist. At the outbreak of the



MILTON
1857
Pop. approx. 2660

History of Milton

Civil War in 1861 he was a rising young lawyer, and Moderator of the March Town Meeting of that year, yet he enlisted as a private soldier the moment the militia was called out. Many others were equally patriotic, but I doubt if they felt quite so strongly about the issue of slavery.

John M. Forbes was a winter resident in Milton and at about this period he customarily rode to his Boston office on horseback, returning the same way in the afternoon. He was an anti-slavery man but could not stomach the excesses of the abolitionists. In the spring of 1859 he had a most interesting guest. John Brown of Kansas fame came out to Milton Hill for the night, and described to the Forbes family and a few assembled friends the details of his fight at Osawatomie. Within a few short months he was to make his mad attempt at Harper's Ferry and to meet his death on the scaffold. By a most extraordinary coincidence the Governor of Missouri, who had a reward of \$3250 out for Brown's capture, visited Mr. Forbes the very next day in connection with some railroad business, and slept in the room occupied the night before by the abolitionist.

The Town Reports of this period show that in 1852 there was in operation a "Town Agency for the Sale of Alcoholic Medicines" which operated for a year at a loss, but when the word "Medicine" in the title was changed to "Liquors" it appears to have prospered for a number of years. The Temperance movement had at last succeeded to a point where the sale of liquor in Milton was evidently restricted, at least to some extent.

I have picked up a few interesting little facts of Milton life at a slightly later time, which however seem to fit in better here than in the discussion of the next period. The Sewing Circle of the Unitarian Church always planned its monthly meetings for the night of the full moon in order that the ladies might have good light on the way home. Mr. Whall, the expressman, made daily trips to Boston, and was always glad to do a little errand for one, such as picking up a parcel or matching a piece of ribbon. I also find mention of the dressmaker coming to a house to stay for a week twice a year, while she turned out the new dresses for the ladies of the household.

The population of the Town was about 2660, but if you wish to know the number of houses you will have to count them on the map for yourself!

MILTON VILLAGE IN 1865
Looking up the hill from the bridge



1888

By 1888 Milton had achieved the character and position which it was to retain for the next forty years. It had become a very wealthy suburb of Boston, but one which still retained its own identity, characteristics and local institutions. Many residents of Boston were establishing summer homes here which in the course of years would become winter homes as well. From Mattapan, Central Avenue, and the Village, eight trains ran to Boston in the morning and ten in the afternoon, with the same number making the return trip. The run was not much over twenty minutes from the Village. The residents of Brush Hill were even better served, for trains ran from Readville to Back Bay Station in ten minutes, and not much longer to the South Station. East Milton also had its daily ten trains each way. The Granite Railway had ceased operations during the 60's, and the line to Boston started in 1871. If one felt economical and had plenty of time, he could ride the horsecars from the Village, arriving at the Old South Church in one hour after changing horses at Fields Corner. Thus access to Boston was very simple, and a considerable portion of the town commuted to work. Analysis of the Milton Directory of 1885, the earliest available, leads me to believe that about one-sixth of those actively employed then worked outside of the town, practically all in Boston. This directory also gives us a detailed report as to what occupations the inhabitants of the town followed.

Capitalists and Executives 29	Skilled Laborers and Craftsmen 158
Businessmen, Salesmen, etc. 94	Factory Hands 72
Lawyers, Doctors, Engineers, etc. 29	Housekeepers 9
Teachers 22	Coachmen 43
Clerks 58	Gardeners 28
Farmers 116	Quarrymen and Stonecutters 78
Town and Govt. Employees 19	Laborers 159

[Total 914 reported out of a population of 3600]

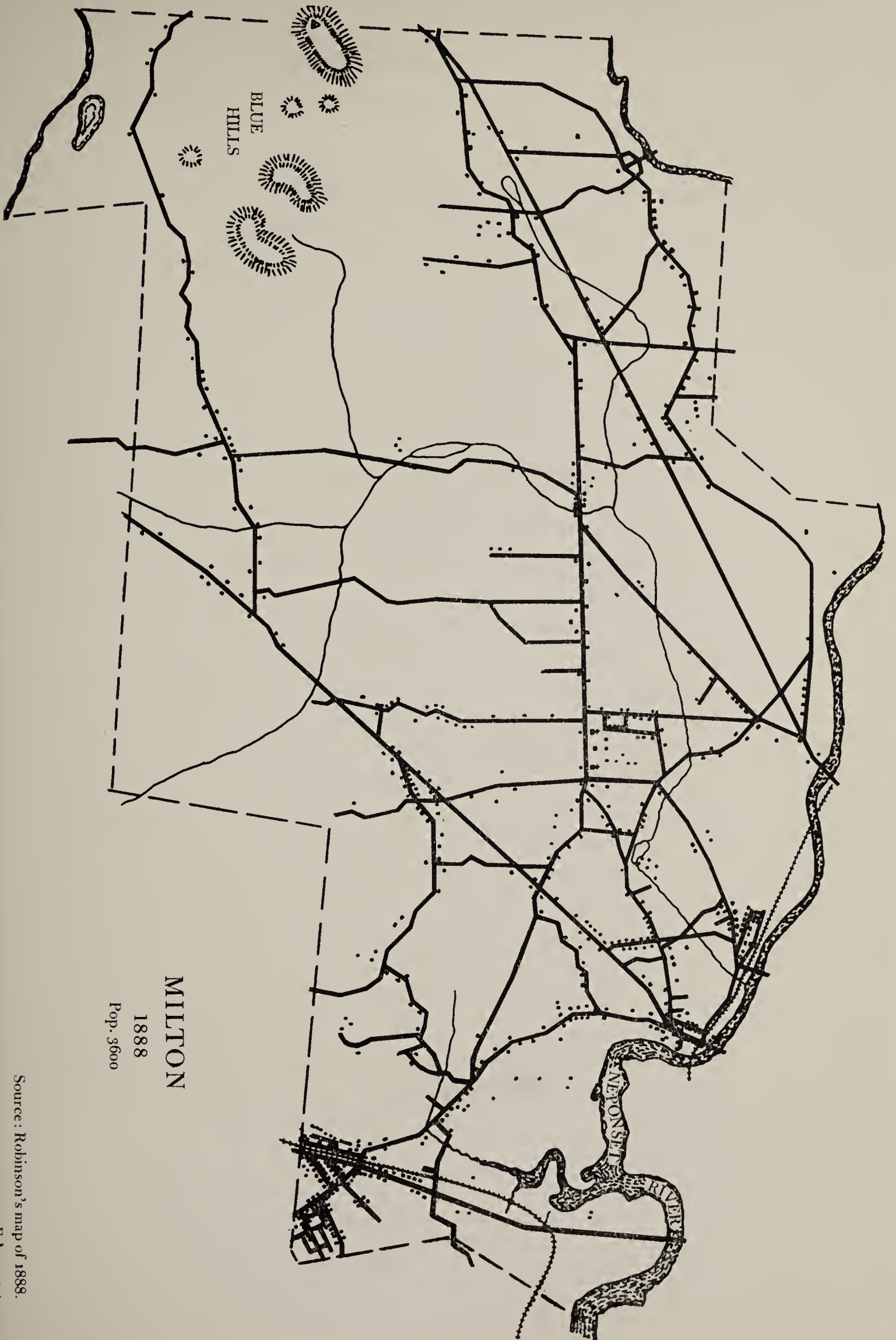
History of Milton

Directories of this period are available which list all the stores and shops, and I will merely summarize the various activities taking place at the main centers. The Village had a lunch-room operator and caterer, a drug store, jeweller, harness maker, carriage shop, livery stable, hay and grain business, barber, meat market and grocery store, shoe store, men's furnishing shop, carriage painter, dentist, coal and lumber yard, paint shop, and newspaper and job printer, as well as a blacksmith. There was also a large carpenter shop making sash and trim.

In East Milton there was a livery stable, a general store, two groceries, a fish market, a shoe store, and two blacksmiths, as well as some stone-cutting sheds. At Blue Hill on Canton Avenue at the southern end of Blue Hills Parkway there was a grocery store which also was the post office for that area. Two churches stood near the Town Hall, Unitarian and Congregational, with a second Congregational group in East Milton, and a Baptist church meeting in the new Associates Building in the Village. St. Gregory's, just over the river, included Milton in its parish at that time.

The town in those days consisted in many ways of three or even more separate communities. The Center and Milton Hill patronized the Village and Talbot's store just over the Dorchester line, while Brush Hill gravitated toward Readville. East Milton was almost a little town in itself, with its own post office, stores, and railway. There was also a considerable settlement on Hillside Street, a material distance from any other part of the town.

A glance at the map will show that most of today's main roads then existed with the exception of Eliot Street between Central Avenue, where a considerable number of houses had just been built, and the Upper Mills at Mattapan. Another missing road was Brook Road south and east of Canton Avenue. Toward the close of the century a major Metropolitan sewer was laid through Milton. It was large enough to drive a two-horse team through, and required several years to build. A very large tar-paper shack was built as a dormitory on a site near Brook Road and Central Avenue. Most of the laborers were Italians who slept there during the week and went into Boston for Sunday. Upon completion of the sewer in the early 1900's Brook Road was continued along its course until it reached Adams Street. Edge Hill



History of Milton

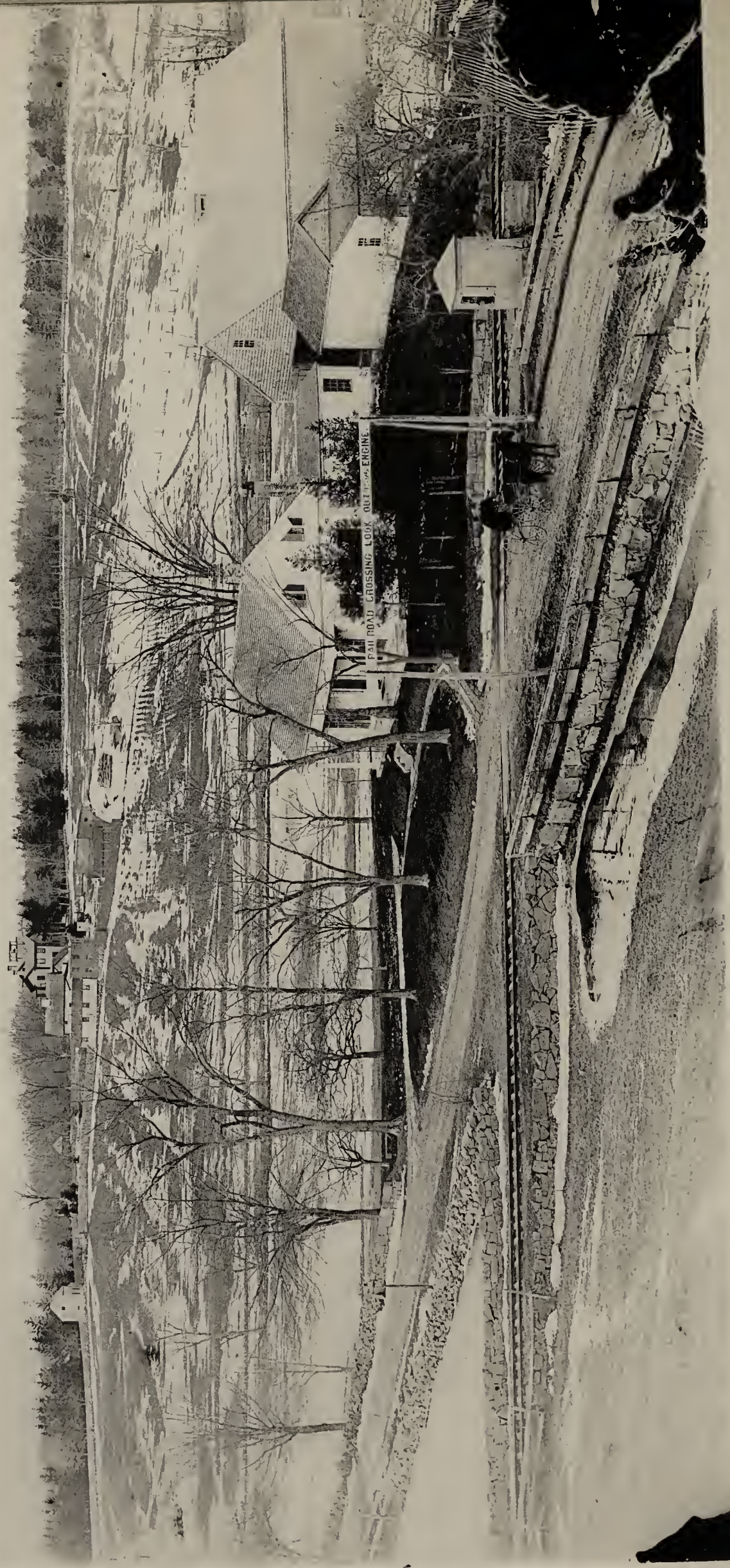
Road would shortly be built between Pleasant Street and Adams Street at East Milton Square.

In 1893 a considerable amount of land in the town was taken over by the State and incorporated into the Blue Hills Reservation. Most of it was in the hills and was of relatively little value for farming purposes, and its development as a park was of material value to many citizens of Milton.

While plumbing and running water had existed for many years in some houses in Milton, they were still very far from being in general use. There was, of course, neither public water supply nor sewerage system. Some houses secured running water by installing a large tank in the attic and a force pump connected to the well. Half an hour to an hour's pumping by a son of the house or a servant (for servants were usual in those days even among the only moderately well-to-do) would put sufficient water into the tank for a day's use. Increasing wealth and the demands of the new residents moving to town from Boston led to a desire for more of the amenities of life, and in the last decade or so of the century these came "bursting out all over", the telephone, electric lights, a water and sewerage system, electric street cars, and Town collection of ashes and garbage.

The telephone was the first to appear. William H. Forbes, son of John M. Forbes, had come out of the Civil War as a young lieutenant colonel, and was devoting his energies to helping manage the family's interests in Western lands and railroads. In the late seventies, however, he invested in the newly developed telephone, and in 1879 became president of the ancestor of today's American Telephone Company. Milton had its first switchboard installed in Nye's Drug Store in the Village on the corner of Eliot Street in July 1881. By 1886 a line had been extended to the top of Blue Hill to serve the Observatory, and there were instruments in a number of the stores. The use of the telephone could not have spread very rapidly, for ten years later there were still less than one hundred subscribers to the Milton exchange.

The 1887 Town Meeting appointed a committee to consider a water supply and sewerage system, but a private company commenced the distribution of water in 1889 with some seven miles of pipe and forty-six hydrants in the Brush Hill area. This little utility, the Brush Hill Water Company, was



CAREY HILL View from Granite Avenue in the 1890's. Squantum Street is in the foreground.

The Story of the Town



MILTON VILLAGE IN 1885
Looking South and West

owned by local capitalists, and drew its water from wells operated by a company in Hyde Park. In the next year another company was formed to serve the Milton Hill area, and the two were merged that summer into a single corporation which was soon supplying water to a large part of Milton. In 1902 the company was bought by the Town.

By 1889 the Village area had its first sewers, which two years later were connected with the Metropolitan system. In 1890, when there was a popula-

History of Milton

tion of 4278 living in 731 dwellings, the Town voted to establish a sewerage system and a Board of Commissioners to operate it.

Parts of Milton had long had gas lights, for the Dorchester Gas Company had laid pipes in Randolph Avenue in 1874. In 1889 the Town refused the offer of the Norfolk Electric Light Company to install street lights. The next year Edwin T. Ruggles built a small steam generating station on Central Avenue, and the Town soon was using electricity from this source for street lighting. I understand that, in the earlier years, electricity was available only during the evening hours. In the spring of 1892 there were seven hundred house and three hundred street lights in use. In 1903 the Boston Edison bought the local company and incorporated it into its system. The Town then secured the old power station and converted it into today's Police Station.

The last decades of the century produced a great innovation in transportation, the electric street railway. The first formal request for a franchise to build and operate such a system in Milton presumably was made in 1894, for in October of that year a special Town Meeting was held to consider the request. Brush Hill and Milton Hill turned out en masse and gave tongue to violent opposition, the gist of which was that their coachmen would be unable to control their horses if a street car was met along the road.¹ This was, I think, the last stand of privilege in Milton, and the defeat of the franchise was overwhelming, four hundred and two to one! Less fortunate citizens of other parts of the town had to wait until 1897 when a franchise was granted, and the first street car was put into operation in July of 1899. The introduction of the street railway caused a revolution in transportation nearly as great as that later brought about by the automobile. The trolley line of most value to Milton residents started in the Village on the Dorchester side, went along Eliot Street to Central Avenue, which it then followed to Brook Road, then along today's Reedsdale Road, and following Pleasant Street and Edge Hill Road to East Milton Square, where connections could be made with cars going to Quincy and Braintree. There was a transfer station on Reeds-

1. Horses in those days were not accustomed to new and unusual sights and noises, and they were very apt to run away, or at least dance around on their hind legs, to the great detriment of harness, dash boards, and nerves, whenever the unexpected was encountered. They were very different from today's sophisticated equines.



A BRUSH HILL GOVERNESS AND HER CHARGES
About 1895



A MEADOWBROOK CART
About 1895

The Story of the Town

dale Road where one could change for a car going down Randolph Avenue to Brockton, and there was also a line along Brook Road to Mattapan, whence cars ran to Blue Hill and farther south. Another track from Readville crossed the Neponset near Paul's Bridge and established the line of that portion of the Parkway running today by the Seminary of the Columban Fathers to Blue Hill Avenue. All the local systems were connected together with inter-urban lines, and in those days one could, practically speaking, travel almost anywhere in New England by trolley car.

The bicycle had come into common use, and it and the street railway allowed America a freedom of movement vastly greater than it had ever before enjoyed. Eventually the growth in use of the automobile and rising costs forced one street railway after another into bankruptcy. Auto buses used the streets provided by the community and required no heavy investments and maintenance costs for tracks. They and the private automobile drove out the streetcar lines, which ceased operations in Milton in 1929, although the Mattapan-Brockton line continued for two more years.

The influx of former Boston residents and the increased transportation facilities were gradually changing the life and interests of the town from that of a self-centered country community into a city suburb. Farms were still being operated for a livelihood, and various little industries continued to flourish. There was also a growth in those services which ministered to the new wealth of the town. Milton, however, as becoming essentially a Boston suburb, depending more and more upon that city for its employment, shopping, and amusement. Local social and intellectual activities of course still continued, and in 1898 the Milton Woman's Club started its long and successful career.

History of Milton



A RAILROAD PRESIDENT'S MANSION OF THE 1880'S
It formerly stood at Blue Hill Avenue and Robbins Street.

The New Century

By 1900 Milton was a fully developed suburban town, of greater than average wealth, and still retaining some purely summer residents, but with little local industry and with most of its interests and activities centering in Boston. It still possessed, as it does today, certain characteristics and habits that made it a very good place in which to live.

Our town has the misfortune to be pierced by four main routes to the southeast and south, and has always been plagued by more traffic troubles than have most of the other towns around Boston. By 1904 the automobile had commenced to make a real nuisance of itself. The editor of the *Milton News* in that year wrote in his paper, "There is hardly an hour when dozens of machines do not rush up or down the [Adams Street] hill." What would the poor man have thought had he been able to look ahead and see today's eight o'clock rush through the Village?

The police ran traps for speeding motor cars, often on Adams Street near Algerine Corner, but in those happier days they seem usually to have merely warned the speeders and suggested that they mend their evil ways. Most roads were quite dusty and one of the motorists' little tricks was to coat their number plates with vaseline, thus ensuring complete illegibility within a very few miles. Officer Fallon took great pleasure in stopping such sinners and standing over them while they knelt and wiped their plates clean. Milton had decreed a 10-mile-an-hour speed limit in 1904, but the bylaw was held void and the General Court passed an ordinance allowing motorists to proceed at a breathtaking and reckless fifteen.

The automobile remained something of a luxury until the period just after the First World War, but by the early twenties ownership of a car was becoming very widespread. This accentuated the move to the suburbs which, while it had existed in Milton since shortly after the Civil War, did not really get under way until early in this century. There was still a lot of vacant land in Milton and the migration from Boston was light for many years.

History of Milton

Thus there was little major effect upon the town that was apparent. It was only in the years after 1929, when the rapid transit system was put in operation, that the full impetus of the rush to the suburbs was felt.

The Milton Woman's Club had been formed just before the turn of the century, at first as a group of those women who were interested in improving the schools and influencing the School Committee. It shortly, however, joined the National Federation and became a normal woman's club interested in social activities and good works. One of its early and most useful ideas for benefiting the community was the employment of a visiting nurse to assist those who could not afford necessary nursing service and care. The Milton Social Service League was started in 1910, and seven years later the two undertakings were merged into the present organization.

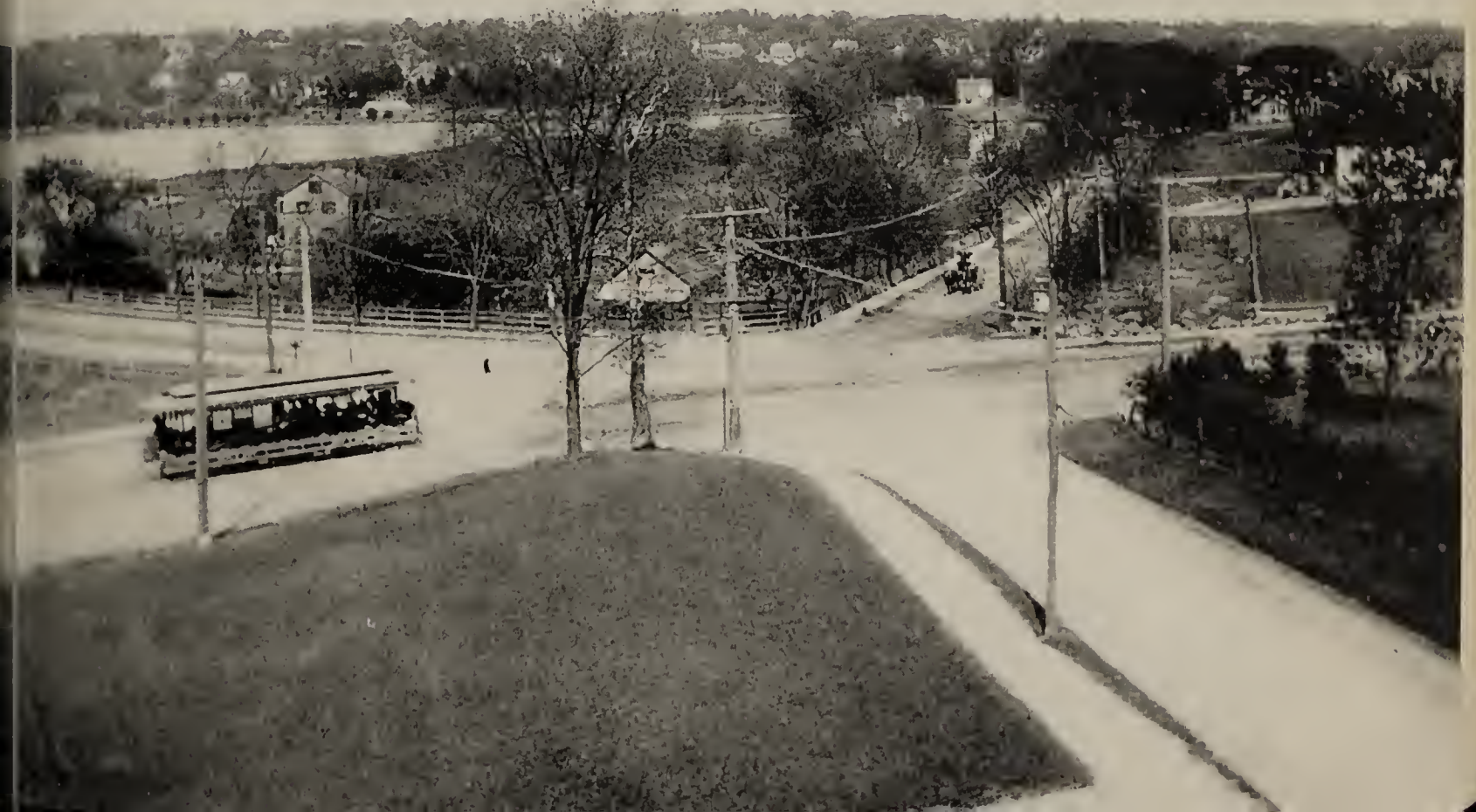
The first ancestor of the Milton Hospital was the Convalescent Home established by Emma Ware in about 1886. The Unitarian Church gave the use of the old Academy House at the corner of Canton Avenue and Thacher Street, and Miss Ware raised the funds necessary to operate it as a summer rest home for poor women and children of Boston and Milton. Before long it was operated throughout the year. In 1905 the trustees under the will of Mary A. Cunningham, who had died the previous year, offered the use of the old Edward Cunningham house to the Convalescent Home. At this same period another group, under the leadership of Dr. M. Vassar Pierce, established a small hospital under the same roof. The two groups were soon merged into the Milton Hospital and Convalescent Home and became, practically speaking, entirely a hospital. In very recent years, after the completion of the new building on Highland Street, the Cunningham house reverted to its former use as a convalescent home, operated in conjunction with the hospital.

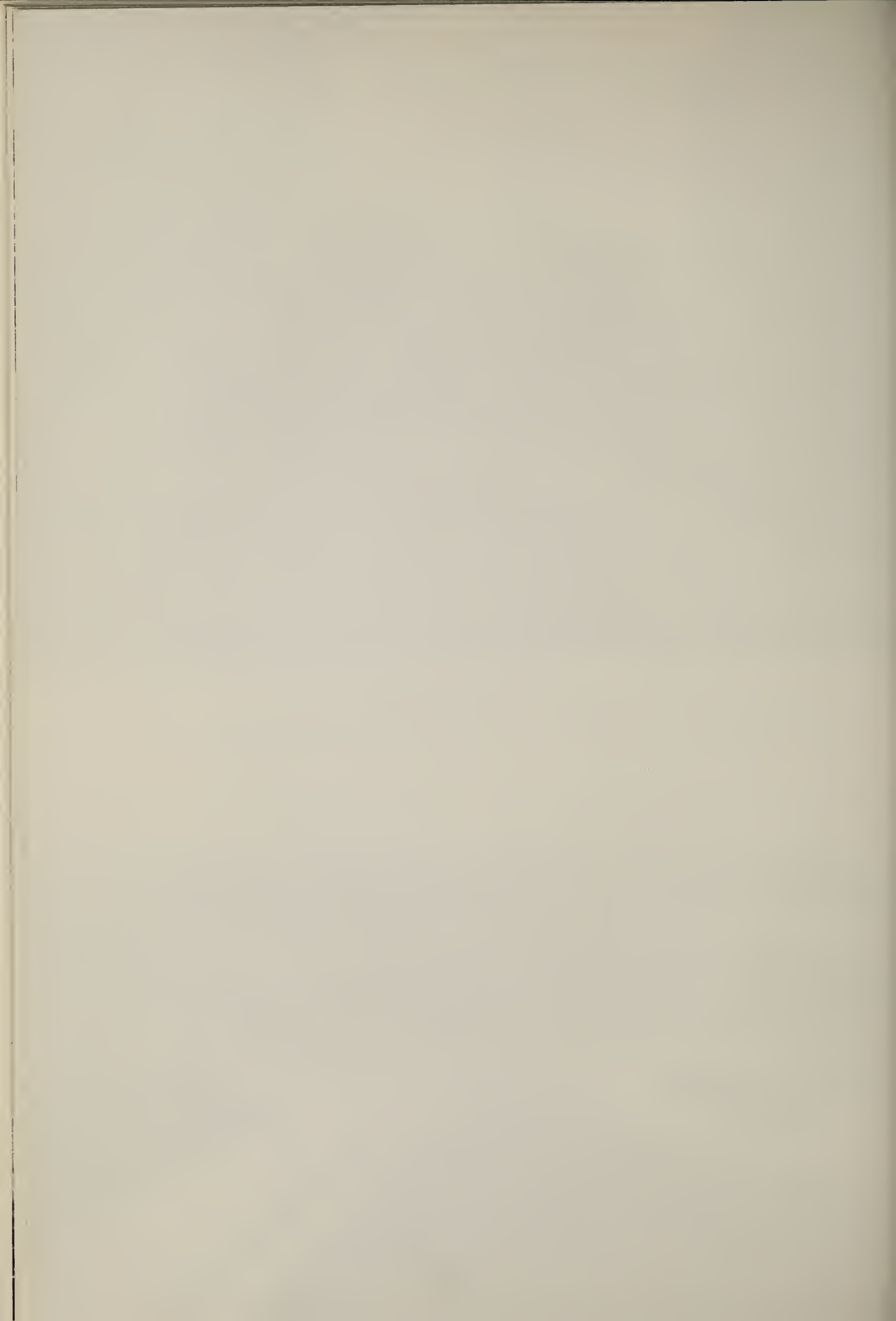
Mrs. Francis Cunningham (Mary Forbes) left practically her entire estate to three trustees who were directed to utilize it in accordance with their best judgment for the benefit of the inhabitants of the Town. Their decision was to establish a park. They bought the large estate of Mrs. Cunningham's nephew and converted the barn into the present gymnasium, which was opened in 1906. In the course of the next few years further attractions were



(above) MILTON VILLAGE Looking north down the hill in about 1900.

(below) KERRIGAN'S CORNER View from roof of High School in about 1910. Note the open trolley car—they were most pleasant in summer.





The Story of the Town

added and Jesse B. Baxter was appointed manager of the park, a position he ably filled for over forty years.

The year 1912 brought the 250th anniversary of the establishment of the Town of Milton and a rather ambitious celebration was carefully planned by a committee appointed by the Town, and was most successfully accomplished. Competitive sports of many kinds were engaged in at several places in the town, with specially designed commemorative medals awarded as prizes. A large platform was built against the north side of the First Parish Church, and various exercises held there. Later in the year an elaborate pageant of episodes in the history of the town was presented on Hutchinson Field against the background of the river and the marshes, in those days a much more attractive setting than it is today. It was directed by Joseph Lindon Smith, and utilized several hundred Milton people of all ages as actors.

It was proposed in 1913 that the old wool-shop pond, formerly known as Davis Pond, and later called Turner's after the proprietor of the ice business conducted there at that time, should, with the surrounding land, be bought by the Town and made into a park. The proposal was turned down by Town Meeting and met a similar fate when the idea was resurrected seven years later and proposed as a war memorial.¹

In 1913 Milton took the first step in an attempt to preserve its character as a residential town of home owners. Town Meeting in that year accepted and put in force the State Tenement House Act, which prevented the erection of any "three decker" houses. That was as far as controls of this nature were to be applied for many years to come. An attempt in 1922 to restrict the building of two-family houses to certain specified areas represented an incomplete and somewhat inequitable regulation which was defeated by the voters. The first zoning restrictions, which allowed only single-family houses and regulated further expansion of business areas, were enacted in 1926, but it was not until twelve years later that a broad all-inclusive zoning plan was adopted.

1. It is interesting to note that one of the most determined opponents of the measure, Felix Rackemann, said in 1913: "Do not buy an ice business, wait, there is no hurry, but sooner or later the Town should buy the property." How right he was time has proven, when over forty years later the Town secured the property for less than a third of the price demanded in 1913.

History of Milton

Throughout the early years of the century the granite business had gradually been losing its battle with concrete, and by the time of the First World War quarrying and stonecutting had largely entered the limbo into which they had been preceded by many another undertaking of the Victorian age. It was not to be many years more before the electric refrigerator and artificial ice sounded the doom of the local ice pond, and the ice-cutting operation, one always most interesting to watch, disappeared from our town. The chocolate mills continued to prosper and a very few little factories and shops were in operation, but Milton of the twentieth century was fated to be a residential and not an industrial town.

The great snowstorm of February 1920 hit Milton a heavy blow. It came at a period when the automobile had replaced the horse to a very considerable extent, but methods of snow removal had not moved with the times. Today truck snow plows have little difficulty in keeping ahead of even a heavy storm, but in 1920 there were only horse-drawn plows, slow and without sufficient power. This storm brought many drifts that were five feet deep, and both the railroad and the streetcar lines went completely out of business. Rail service was restored in a matter of days, but the trolleys gave up entirely and two cars were abandoned on Central Avenue near Valley Road and lay embedded in snowdrifts until released a month or more later by the spring thaw. The streets were finally cleared after a fashion within about a week of the storm, but the few remaining sleighs and pungs, plus snowshoes and an occasional pair of skis, were what had kept the town going for the first few days. Food supplies became short, and the Fire Department issued a warning that it could not be expected to answer fire alarms in many parts of the town.

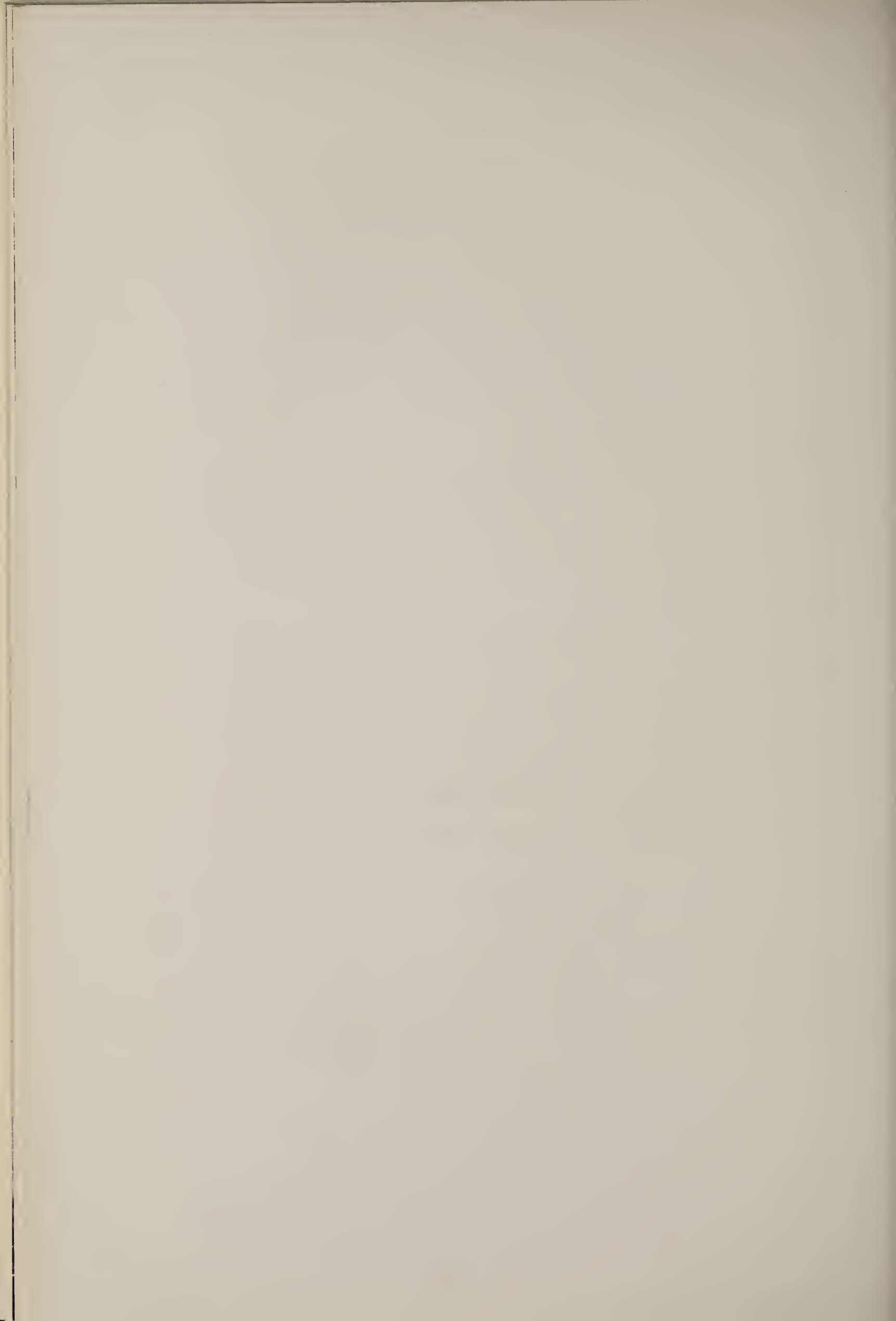
This great storm marked the beginning of the end of the streetcar lines in Milton. The line from the Village by the High School and Library on to East Milton was kept in operation for a few years longer by means of an annual subsidy furnished by the Town. The Blue Hill Street Railway, however, gave up the ghost and the Brush Hill Transport Company brought the first passenger buses to Milton in 1920. In this same year a centuries-old taboo finally succumbed to changing times, and Sunday sports were allowed under permits issued by the Selectmen.

The Story of the Town

The Sacco-Vanzetti murder case is largely forgotten today except by those who still try to make the two men into martyrs, but it aroused tremendous interest and many animosities at the time. The two men were convicted, and after appeals and reviews were finally executed in mid-July 1927. Lewis McHardy of Pleasant Street had served on the jury which tried the pair, and at almost the exact hour of their execution his house was bombed by some fanatic. Neither he nor any of his family was hurt, but the house was so badly damaged that it had to be torn down and a new structure built. The citizens of the town immediately started raising funds to make good the losses of the family and well over fifteen thousand dollars were contributed, mostly but not entirely from local sources.

In this same year Walter Baker & Company was sold to the Postum Company (now General Foods), and an enterprise which had been owned locally since the time of the Revolution passed into the hands of strangers.

In this series of brief period sketches I have tried to give an idea of what our town was like at these various times in its history and of how it was gradually evolving into its ultimate form. We have seen Milton change from a hamlet of farms to a lusty little mill village surrounded by a prosperous farming community, and then to a wealthy town containing the large estates of many former residents of Boston. We leave it now, in 1929, a large and very well-to-do commuting suburb of Boston, connected to the city with several highways and a metropolitan transit system. The last phase, that of more recent years, was the breaking-up of many of the large estates into house lots, and a great increase in population with all of its attendant problems. The story of this I shall leave to the pen of some future historian.



The River

THE Neponset River was a most important factor in the history of Milton. Initially it was something of a nuisance, the first important obstacle to travel on the Plymouth path, and it was large enough, particularly in freshet time, to make its crossing a serious matter. The river was such a barrier that it became the southern limit of the Bay Colony for several years, and it was only after the first bridge was built that any settlements were made on the farther shore.

The other aspect of the river, and one which was to become of ever-increasing importance, was that of its water power. Throughout the history of this country man has always turned to machinery to lessen his tasks. In the South, due to slave labor, this was somewhat less marked, but in New England this tendency developed to a very great extent. The falls of the Neponset at Unquity offered an almost ideal situation for water power: the river was large enough to promise a good flow even during relatively dry periods, yet it was small enough to harness without too extensive a dam. Moreover the power site was directly on the trail to the South Shore, and it was practically at tidewater, allowing easy shipment by water.

In 1634 Israel Stoughton secured permission from both the Town of Dorchester and the General Court to erect a corn mill at Unquity. He was required to build and maintain a bridge, and he was allowed to build a weir and take alewives which were to be sold at a regulated price. The grist mill furnished a most welcome service to Dorchester, and rendered unnecessary the laborious hand grinding or pounding hitherto used. It has often been

History of Milton

stated that this was the first New England corn mill, but I regret to say that this is not true. We have it on the authority of Governor Winthrop himself that there was a corn mill in Roxbury in 1633, and there probably was another at Saugus at this same time. Watertown also built one in the latter part of 1634, a month or two after the one at Unquity.

The staple cereal of New England was Indian corn, and it required cracking or grinding before it could be eaten. If cracked in a wooden mortar it became hominy grits, but this could not be made into bread. When pounded long enough about one-third of the corn may be reduced to a flour, but the process is laborious and wasteful. For baking purposes the corn must be ground into meal, and this was best done between a pair of circular millstones, one of which revolved above the other. They did not quite touch each other when running, and the clearance was adjustable, thus determining the degree of coarseness of the meal produced. The stones were usually from four to five feet in diameter, although some of the older ones ran as much as six feet. The grinding face carried a series of grooves which facilitated the operation. The earliest millstones had grooves which spiralled across the grinding surface; later the system of straight grooves came in. The lower stone was bedded in the floor of the mill, and up through its center protruded the end of a vertical revolving iron shaft which supported and turned the upper stone. This runner stone, as it was called, had a hole of some nine or more inches diameter cut through its center, called the eye, and this was bridged with an iron cross piece, the ryne, which was hung on top of the revolving shaft, thus centering and driving the upper stone. Grains of corn were dropped into the eye of the upper stone by a feeding mechanism, and emerged around the periphery of the stones as meal, which, when passed through a sieve to remove the husks, was ready for use. A corn mill such as this was not difficult to build, and the only expensive item was the stones. They could be made of granite or other local rock, but much better millstones were brought over from England and France. In later years quarries were found in America which produced excellent stones but not as good as the imported.

Unquity's little corn mill stood in what was then really wilderness, but

The River

Dorchester almost at once built a road to it, and the first settlements across the Neponset started at the same time. There were, however, no houses other than that of the miller built near it for a long time to come.

The Neponset mill, as it then was known, ground its grist for almost forty years before any real change occurred. In 1659 two Dorchester men promised the Town to build a fulling mill before the end of the following year, but the project fell through.

At last in 1674 another mill was built at the Unquity end of the grist mill dam. It was a gunpowder mill, and, so far as I have been able to determine, it was the first one in New England and probably the first in America. The Massachusetts Bay Colony records contain a great many references to gunpowder, and in 1642 all the towns were directed to make saltpeter, one of the ingredients. In 1648 Edward Rawson, a prominent magistrate and long the Secretary of the Colony, was granted land and £5 for "his expenses and damages sustained in provisions to make gunpowder." Next year the record reads: "stock of powder—have taken care that a supply may be made." There is nothing to prevent one making small quantities of gunpowder by hand methods, and from these entries it would seem clear that some had been made prior to building the powder mill at Milton. I believe, however, that any such minor and sporadic manufacture does not prevent Milton from claiming the first powder mill. In 1676 Edward Randolph, who came over as a Royal agent and was for many years a source of much annoyance to Puritan New England, reported: "At Dorchester, seven miles from Boston, is a powder mill in good repair, well wrought—The powder is as good and strong as the best English powder—".

The mill was built by a small group of Boston capitalists, two of whom are of particular interest to Milton. The Rev. Thomas Thacher, minister of the Old South Church, was the father of Peter Thacher, our first regular minister, and the Rev. John Oxenbridge was soon to become Peter's father-in-law. Another member of the group was Capt. John Hull, the Colony mint master who made the Pine Tree shillings, and who was the father-in-law of Samuel Sewall the diarist. Walter Everden operated the mill, and gradually bought up the shares of the proprietors until he became the sole owner.

History of Milton

Powder was always a desirable commodity in this country, and the outbreak of King Philip's War in 1675 was to make it even more so. The process of manufacture was a simple one. Charcoal, sulphur, and saltpeter were ground up and mixed while wet. After drying, the resulting cake was broken up into a powder, which was then passed through a number of sieves of graduated coarseness, sorting the finished powder into the various sizes desired; the largest for cannon powder, the smallest for priming the pans of the firelocks, as the muzzle loading flintlocks were then called. The little mill would not have been very different from the corn mill, and it is possible that the same sort of grinding stones were used, as they later were in a powder mill in Canton. Power operated stamps were an effective alternate mechanism, and perhaps more usual.

Peter Thacher's diary in June of 1681 records his going to the raising of the Widow Gill's Mill, and the Dorchester records of the year before state that this lady was granted permission to cut Town timber to use in the repair of her mill. She was then the owner of the corn mill, her late husband, John Gill, having bought it from the Stoughton heirs in 1673. The land on the Milton side of the river east of the highway also belonged to her, and she may have built a new mill there, but I am inclined to think that this operation in 1681 was the reconstruction of the old 1634 corn mill.

At about this same time a committee looked into the question of building a sawmill "above the house of Daniel Elder", somewhere upstream from the existing mills, but no action was taken. The Dedham sawmill remained the nearest one to Milton for many years, and there is an interesting reason for this. Very early in the history of New England the lumber trade developed along the fall line of the New Hampshire and Maine coasts. Logs were driven down the rivers to sawmills located on the falls at tidewater. The sawed lumber was then shipped in little sloops to all the markets along the Massachusetts coast. This operation lasted for centuries, and as recently as 1940 I have seen little sailing vessels unloading lumber from down East, in this case Nova Scotia, at a lumber yard located at the Granite Avenue bridge on the Neponset. In more recent years the trade has been by small motor ships, and sail has gone forever. Farther inland, away from tidewater, there was a

The River

need for sawmills, and they became very common, every town having at least one and often several.

"Went to Neponset . . . to see the fulling mill lately set up, and direct for the right fitting and ordering of it," says Sewall's diary for 3 August 1688. This mill adjoined the powder mill built fourteen years before, one of whose owners was Sewall's father-in-law John Hull, thus accounting for the diarist's interest in the mill.

Its construction was a great convenience to the neighborhood, for the fulling mill in Roxbury had up to now been the nearest one. Woolen cloth when it comes from the hand loom is not unlike burlap in that each thread is separate, and the cloth lacks body. The fulling operation shrinks and compacts the cloth. It can be accomplished by treading the cloth in a pail of soapy water with bare feet, but it is much easier to let a machine do it instead. The fulling stocks, which usually were driven by water power, consisted of a pair of great wooden mallets, hinged at the upper ends of their nearly vertical shafts or handles, the mallet heads resting against a loose bundle of woolen cloth enclosed on the three sides and the bottom of an inclined wooden tub. The mallets were raised alternately by cams on the waterwheel shaft, and allowed to drop against the wet and soapy cloth in the tub. The shape of the mallets and the tub were such that the cloth was constantly turned and shifted. When sufficiently fulling the cloth was stretched to dry on tentering frames, similar to but larger and much longer than the frames we use today to dry and stretch curtains. The tentering frames were covered with a considerable number of little L-shaped nails, one sharp end driven into the wood, the other used to catch the edge of the cloth, and hold it stretched while it dried. These little nails were called tenterhooks, a word we have all heard, but the origin of which we probably never knew. A piece of heavy woolen cloth might be fulling in the stocks for as long as a week, day and night, and might shrink as much as half, both in length and width. Fuller's earth was used to remove grease and oil from the cloth, and thus obtained its name.

This was the basic fulling operation, but the operator, usually called a "clothier", in many cases also dyed and further finished the cloth. After

History of Milton

fulling, the nap was often raised by stroking it with teasels, a sort of burr, and then was trimmed with large shears.¹ The three essential village mills, which well might be called the mills of the age of homespun, were the corn mill and the fulling mill, with the sawmill for all places except those getting their lumber by water from down East.

During the closing years of the seventeenth century no great change took place in the mills, but something of a little village grew up around the Milton lower falls. There is very little that we can learn about the size of the settlement in those days. It was essentially an industrial one. The miller of the grist mill had a house, there was a watch house on the Dorchester side, built during King Philip's War to provide a guard at the powder mill, and there was a house for the employees of the powder mill on the same side of the river. Possibly there was another little house in connection with the fulling mill, but that probably was all. There was no store and no tavern on the Milton side, nor, I believe, on the Dorchester shore. Both towns were devoted essentially to farming and there was as yet no incentive, other than that resulting from the use of the water power, to cause settlement there. A little later we find the shipping possibilities of the river leading to mercantile activities, but there is no indication of any at this period, although a Town landing had been established on the Milton side.

It is not my intention to itemize every mill built in Milton; the attached diagram should furnish an outline for those in the Village, and Edmund J. Baker's detailed study in the Dorchester Antiquarian Society's *History of Dorchester* will give further details to those interested. In about 1710 a second powder mill was built on the Dorchester side by Benjamin Everden, son of the first powder maker, at a new lower dam below the old corn mill, while the Rev. Joseph Belcher of Dedham, son-in-law of John Gill, appears to have built a sawmill on the Milton side of this new lower dam two or three years earlier. The corn mill was known for years as the Neponset Mill, and the little settlement soon was called Neponset Village, a name which lasted as late as 1826. By the early 1700's quite an important little industrial center had

1. It might be of interest to remark that many years ago in England the prototype of our common spiral reel lawn mower was invented to trim the nap of teaselled cloth.

The River

grown up, and this was materially augmented by the establishment in 1728 of New England's first paper mill.

Today only the very finest paper is made of rags,² but until about a century ago all paper was composed almost solely of rag stock. Linen and cotton scraps were superficially cleaned and cut up into small bits, often against an old scythe blade set vertically in a wooden block, and then were moistened, piled up, and allowed to commence to rot. The scraps were then put in a wooden mortar and water added, while a power-driven pestle or hammer pounded the mass into a pulp. This rag stock was passed through a series of mortars and the water constantly renewed, thus cleaning the material and breaking it up into a mass of separate fibers. At a little later period the Holland beating engine was introduced. This completed the operation in a single oval-shaped tank in which a beating drum carrying knives revolved on a horizontal axis, but the first Milton paper mill must have had the old mortar and stamp equipment. The finished product of the beating process, whichever method was used, was a liquid gruel of fibers suspended in water, of about the consistency of pea soup, and this was put in a large circular vat and warmed to about ninety degrees. The papermaker, a man of great skill, took his mold, which was a shallow frame of the size of the desired sheet of paper, its bottom formed by a piece of fine wire screen, and dipped it into the vat, thus picking up a quantity of the pulp which he distributed evenly over the mold by skillful manipulation. The water drained out through the screen, leaving a thin mass of interlocking fibers behind. The papermaker, again exercising great skill, inverted the mold over a so-called "felt", which actually was a piece of woven cloth, depositing on the "felt" the future sheet of paper which at this time was not unlike a very wet piece of newspaper, and of even less strength. A stack of "felts", each holding its thin load of wet pulp, was next put in a press, and great pressure was brought to bear through a screw with a long lever attached, thus squeezing out practically all the water. Each sheet now had enough strength and body to allow it to be stripped from its "felt", and hung over racks in the drying room, in the case of the Milton mill the second story, the walls of which contained many

2. This book is printed on rag paper.

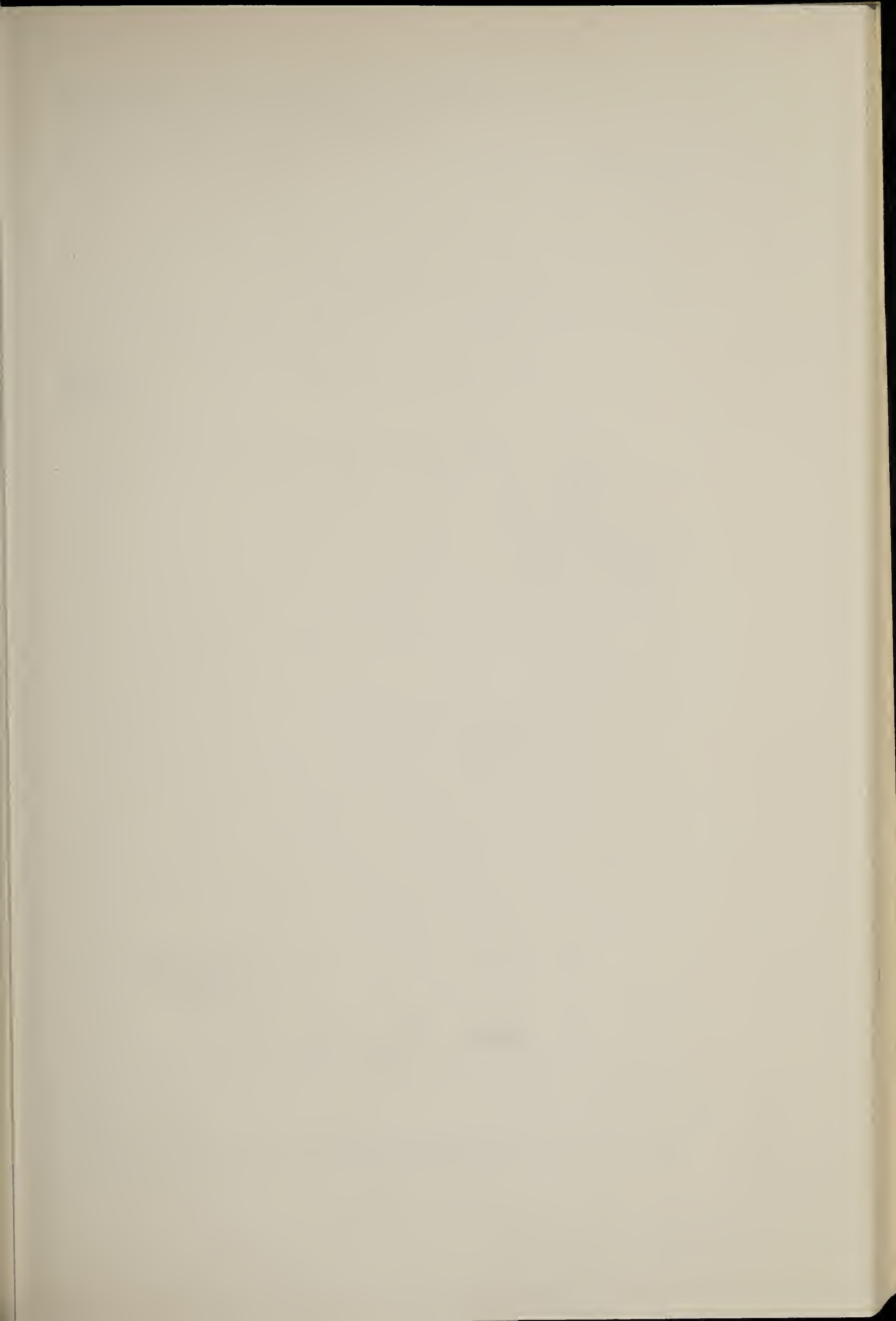
History of Milton

vertical hinged shutters such as are used today in Connecticut Valley tobacco drying sheds. After drying, the paper was calendered by applying a sizing and smoothing the surface by hand rubbing with a stone or under a power operated hammer. Wooden rollers were beginning to replace the finishing hammer by the time that the Milton mill was built, and they may have been used here.

This was the basic papermaking process which still is used today, except that chemistry has allowed us to substitute cheaper materials (which result in shorter-lived papers) and the Fourdrinier machine has replaced the hand mold, press, and finishing methods with a single continuous process. The first Milton paper mill probably had a force of about three men and a boy, perhaps with a girl or two preparing rags and hanging paper on the drying racks.

The mill was financed by a small group of Boston merchants who leased the structure built by Rev. Joseph Belcher some twenty years before. They built a house adjoining it that was long known as the "Old Paper Mill House", and which lasted into this century before it was removed to make room for a Walter Baker storehouse. Henry Deering, one of the owners, managed the mill for a number of years, and in about 1737 Jeremiah Smith, who had come to Boston from the north of Ireland some twelve years before, replaced him. Smith gradually bought out all the various owners and eventually secured the land and buildings.

The success of the operation was dependent upon the services of a good papermaker, and such a man was not always available. At one period the mill was able to produce only an uneven coarse paper of poor color, suitable merely for wrapping paper. John Hazleton, a British soldier on furlough, was foreman of the mill for a part of this period, but had to leave in 1759 when his regiment was moved away. James Boies, who had married a daughter of Jeremiah Smith, induced Richard Clarke, an English papermaker, to come to the mill in 1760. In 1769 Smith took another son-in-law, Daniel Vose, into partnership, and then retired six years later. Meanwhile James Boies had set up a paper mill for himself at Mattapan in 1764, and Clarke went there with him.



In the HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, February 16, 1776.

WHEREAS this Colony cannot be supplied with a sufficient Quantity of PAPER for its own Consumption, without the particular Care of its Inhabitants in saving RAGS for the Paper-Mills : Therefore,

RESOLVED, That the Committees of Correspondence, Inspection, and Safety in the several Towns in this Colony be, and they hereby are required immediately to appoint some suitable Person in their respective Towns (where it is not already done) to receive RAGS for the Paper-Mills : And the Inhabitants of this Colony are hereby desired to be very careful in saving even the smallest Quantity of Rags proper for making Paper, which will be a further Evidence of their Disposition to promote the Public Good.

Sent up for Concurrence.

WILLIAM COOPER, Speak. Pro. Tem.

In Council, Feb. 16, 1776.

Read and Concurred,

PEREZ MORTON, Dep'y. Sec'y.

Consented to, by the Major Part of the Council.

A true Copy,

Attest. PEREZ MORTON, Dep'y. Sec'y.



PAPER-MILLS,

At the SLITTING-MILL, in MILTON.

In Compliance with the foregoing RESOLVE,

and to Encourage the

PAPER-MANUFACTURE.

WE now propose to give *Three Coppers* per Pound for all white Linnen, and Cotton and Linnen RAGS, suitable for making WRITING-PAPER ; which is Three Pence O. T. per Pound more than has been given :--- Also, One Copper and an Half per Pound is now given for Check and course Rags, and Two Coppers for Canvass, that is either made of Hemp or Flax ; and Half a Copper a Pound for old Ropes and Junk.--Ropes and Junk that are too bad for Oakum will make good Paper.

It is therefore hoped, that more Attention will be paid to this Affair in future, both from a Principle of *Patriotism* and *Frugality*. The present alarming Situation of the Colonies, renders it entirely needless to point out the Utility of establishing this, and every Kind of *Manufacture* among us ; and if each Family will but lend their Aid, to encourage this Business, by saving their Rags, there may be a Sufficiency of Paper made here, and entirely prevent the Importation of that Article into this Country.

* * Any Gentlemen, Traders, or others throughout this Country, that will so far promote the Interest of AMERICA, by receiving Rags for the aforesaid Purpose, shall be paid Ten per Cent. Commissions, and necessary Charges of Transportation, either by Land or Water to said Mills : And the smallest Favors gratefully acknowledged by their very Humble Servants,

HUGH M^cLEAN AND C^o.

TO BE SOLD at said MILL, all Sorts of PRINTING

PAPER,

Writing ditto, London Brown, Whitish Brown, Bonnet Paper : Likewise Press Paper for Clothiers, for glazing and goodnets superior to any made in America, and not inferior to the best made in England.

CASH given for RAGS by

SALAM : Printed by R. RUSSELL, Upper End of Main-street : Who gives CASH for all Kinds of Cotton and Linnen and Check RAGS, for the Use of the above PAPER-MILLS.

The River

By 1728 Neponset Village was a major industrial center, and one probably exceeded by none on this continent. At the original upper dam there was a grist mill and a fulling mill on the Dorchester side, and a powder mill and another fulling mill in Milton, while the lower dam had a second powder mill on one side and the paper mill on the other, a total of six separate mills. A few years later, in 1744, the upper Milton powder mill blew up, as most powder mills seem to have done sooner or later, taking the fulling mill along with it. The upper mill site in Milton then remained unoccupied for almost twenty years, something rather unusual in those days when water power was of such importance.

There was another fall in the river at what we today call Mattapan, but was then known as the Upper Mills. Shortly before 1709 Ezra Clapp, Manasseh Tucker and three others built a grist mill at this fall. Two years later this group permitted David Colson, a fellmonger, or dealer in hides, to erect a mill for processing skins just below the grist mill. The fulling stocks were, and today still are, also used in processing some kinds of leather, and what Colson built was essentially a fulling mill. The record is not entirely clear, but I am almost certain that these two mills were on the Dorchester side. Shortly after 1711 Jonathan Jackson, a wealthy Boston merchant, bought most and perhaps all of this property. He dug a canal, or "trench" as it then was called, on the Milton side, and part of its outline can still be seen today, downstream from the Blue Hills Parkway. This was a different type of water power development from that used in Neponset Village where the mills were near the dams and short wooden flumes carried the water. At the end of the canal Jackson built a rather uncommon mill, an iron-slitting mill. He also built a large house nearby where he could live in summer and keep his eye on the mill. This house lasted until quite recent times, when it was removed and the Metropolitan Police Station built a little south of its site.

A slitting mill was an iron-processing mill, which fabricated the product of the forge.³ The trip hammer of an iron forge turned out an iron bar, perhaps half an inch thick by three inches wide and some six feet long, and

3. There is a very carefully executed reconstruction of a slitting mill at the Saugus Iron Works restoration, opened in 1955. It is well worth a visit.

History of Milton

could not make it much smaller in cross section. The blacksmiths and nail-makers, on the other hand, wanted iron flats of perhaps a quarter-inch thick and one or two inches wide, and nail rods an eighth to three-sixteenths square. The slitting mill took the bars as they came from the forge, and by first passing them while red hot through a pair of rolls, and then slicing them lengthwise by a set of power-driven rotary shears, turned out the small strips and nail rods that were desired by the consumers. A slitting mill could service the output of several trip hammers, and they were usually built in the near vicinity of a group of forges. In this respect the Milton mill was an exception, for no iron was produced in the neighborhood.

The Mattapan slitting mill burned in 1742, but was evidently rebuilt, for there are records of its operation in 1757, and it or a later mill was in use in 1769, but was closed shortly thereafter. It has been claimed that this was the first slitting mill in the country, but this is not correct, the slitting mill at the Saugus Iron Works preceding it by many years.

The grist mill and the fulling mill on the Dorchester side were sold by the Jackson estate, and in 1772 Andrew Gillespie altered the fulling mill into a snuff mill, but the business soon failed and the property was taken over by James Boies and Hugh McLean, who built a chocolate mill there in 1779.

James Boies bought the Jackson property on the Milton side in 1764, and built a paper mill, as well as repairing or rebuilding the old slitting mill. The latter mill, however, did not pay, and he built another paper mill in its place about 1769 or shortly thereafter. Boies and Richard Clarke jointly owned the first paper mill, while the second was owned and operated by Boies and Hugh McLean. There was also a small chocolate mill on the Milton side. This all sounds quite involved and gives one the impression of a large group of mills here at Mattapan. Actually, in 1770 for example, there was probably only one building on the Dorchester side, while there were two in Milton, perhaps a third little one housing the chocolate mill, or this might equally well have been in a shed attached to one of the paper mills. There were two low dams and a canal over two hundred yards long.

In 1782 one of the Mattapan paper mills and the chocolate mill burned to the ground. The paper mill was rebuilt, and a new chocolate mill erected on

The River

the Dorchester side of the river. This last mill was changed into a paper mill in 1817, and then there were in all three paper mills, one in Dorchester and two in Milton. These mills passed through various hands until by 1828 they were all owned by Tileston and Hollingsworth, who continued to operate them until 1881.

James Boies had married a daughter of Jeremiah Smith of the Neponset Village paper mill, as had Daniel Vose, while Hugh McLean married a daughter of James Boies. Thus the mill owners of both the upper and the lower falls were closely tied together by marriage, and a little later Edmund Baker, son of Walter, was to further the ties by marrying a daughter of Daniel Vose.

John McLean, son of Hugh, did not remain in the papermaking trade, but moved to Boston and set up as a merchant, eventually making a fortune, and leaving large bequests to the Massachusetts General Hospital, then in its early youth, and to Harvard. The McLean Asylum was named after him.

Returning to the lower falls at Neponset Village, we now find three new kinds of mills appearing in the period just before the outbreak of the Revolution. In 1761 Andrew McKenzie, a merchant of Boston, bought some land on the Dorchester side just downstream from the fulling mill, and put up a snuff mill. I have been able to learn very little about old snuff mills beyond the fact that the tobacco was ground into a dust in wooden mortars, preferably made of sycamore, by power operated pestles. Records of snuff mills on the Charles River at a slightly later period speak of mills with five mortars each, and it is very probable that the Milton mill was about the same size. This little snuff mill ran for nearly thirty years, and then was replaced by another paper mill, the second built in Milton Village.

In 1765 a sawmill appears—up until now the one at Dedham had been the nearest, save for the one Belcher may have operated for a few years. The early American sawmill, and they seem to have been very much the same from Maine to Virginia, was a long narrow shed with a tight roof, but with side walls usually only partly boarded up. A straight saw blade some six feet long was stretched vertically in a frame which a water wheel drove up and

History of Milton

down in vertical guide slots. The log to be sawed was fastened with iron "dogs" to a long narrow carriage sliding along on a track, and advanced against the saw blade by a simple ratchet arrangement. The Milton mill had a single saw, but some larger mills drove gang saws which cut several boards at each pass of the carriage. All early mills had these vertical up-and-down saws, the circular saw not coming into use until about 1840. While the Milton sawmill was in process of construction some malicious persons sabotaged it, but the damage was quickly repaired. This mill was built on the still unoccupied site where the powder mill had blown up years before.

A notable event took place in 1765. A man named John Hannon, who said he knew how to make chocolate, appeared in Milton. Edward Wentworth and Henry Stone, both residents of Stoughton, who were building the sawmill, added to the structure an annex suitable for making chocolate, and thus was introduced to Milton an odor which has now lasted for one hundred and ninety years, and which brings back homesick memories to all former residents of the town. The process of preparing the cocoa bean was quite simple. After cleaning, the beans were roasted, and the thin outer shell cracked and removed by a winnowing process. The remaining kernels were ground between a pair of stones very similar to those used for corn, and the resulting paste made into chocolate by adding sugar and perhaps vanilla. This paste might on the other hand be made into cocoa by removing the fatty cocoa butter, and drying and pulverizing the remainder.

It has long been claimed that this was the first chocolate mill in North America, and this is probably correct if we mean a power operated mill. Chocolate could, however, be prepared in relatively small quantities by hand methods, and the *Boston Gazette*, 5-12 September 1737, advertised an "engine to grind cocoa" which would cost much less than those commonly used, and would prepare one hundred pounds of beans in less than six hours. It is evident that chocolate had been made in this area long before the Milton mill started its operation. In 1751 it was being made and sold in Boston at twelve and fourteen shillings a pound.

In 1768 Hannon moved his mill to the other side of the river into Preston's fulling mill building, where a run of stones and one kettle were installed.



HANNON'S CHOCOLATE WRAPPER
About 1770 (State Street Trust)



MATTAPAN PAPER MILL
Date unknown, but probably around 1800. Photo taken about 1895.



The River

This burned down in 1775 and he returned to his old location on the upper dam on the Milton side. Meanwhile in 1773 he had married Elizabeth Gore of Boston, and managed to get along with her for six years, but it finally became too much for him. He gave out word that he was sailing to the West Indies to buy chocolate, but actually headed back to the green fields of Erin and never was seen again. Nothing daunted, Elizabeth tried to continue the mill under the management of the apprentice, Nathaniel Blake, but he could not stand it either and walked out on her. Daniel Vose then took over both the mill and the apprentice, and Elizabeth disappears from our knowledge.

By the time of the Revolution Neponset Village was a major industrial center. At the upper dam, just upstream from the Plymouth Road, there were on the Milton side the sawmill with its attached chocolate mill, owned at this time by Barlow Trecothick, and leased to Daniel Vose, who later was to buy it, while at the opposite end of the dam there were the grist mill, a fulling mill and a snuff mill. The lower dam below the bridge supplied the paper mill on the Milton side, while on the other end where Benjamin Everden had run a second powder mill before he removed to Canton in 1757, there now stood another fulling mill, which also contained Preston's chocolate mill. Thus we find grouped together in Neponset Village eight little manufacturing establishments, small in size it is true, and probably not employing more than a score or so of workmen in all, yet representing for the time and place a very important segment of the industry that existed in America in that day.

At about this same period the Mattapan dam was supplying power to two paper mills, a snuff mill, a chocolate mill, and possibly also a grist mill. There was opportunity for a second dam above Mattapan, a little upstream from where Brush Hill Road swings away from the Neponset, at the place where the Tileston and Hollingsworth Hyde Park paper mill is located today. The records are a little confused, but it appears that this dam, known as the Sumner dam, was built just before the Revolution, and furnished power at one time or another before 1800 to a paper mill, a sawmill, a grist mill and a chocolate shop. Before many years the paper mill absorbed all the others.

History of Milton

In 1793 Jeremiah Smith Boies, grandson of Jeremiah Smith, built a new dam about halfway between Mattapan and Central Avenue, while Daniel Vose and John Capen built another a short distance below it. A bitter lawsuit resulted. Boies moved his dam upstream a little to a point opposite the end of today's Capen Street, and built paper, chocolate, and grist mills on it. Mark Hollingsworth came from Delaware to work in the paper mill, and he was shortly joined by Edmund Tileston who had learned the papermaker's trade in Milton Village. By 1805 the pair were in partnership, and, the mill burning down that year, they moved upstream to the paper mill on the Sumner dam, which today still serves the firm of Tileston and Hollingsworth, paper manufacturers. The old dam remained unused for some years after the fire, but in 1811 the Dorchester Cotton and Iron Works built a mill for carding and spinning cotton. This company bought out the Capen dam near today's Central Avenue, and put up a second cotton mill and machine shop. Finally in 1826 the Capen dam was raised sufficiently to flood out the dam of the 1811 factory which shortly became Liversidge's starch factory, and remained there until a relatively few years ago. Thus by 1826 we have arrived at the condition that exists today, two dams at the Lower Mills, the upper flowing back to the tail water of the Central Avenue mill, which in turn backed up its water to the lower of the Mattapan dams, no longer used today.

The Dorchester Cotton and Iron Works at Central Avenue burned about a hundred years ago, and a paper mill was built there in about 1863 by Tileston and Hollingsworth. This was known as the Eagle Mills, and it too was partly destroyed by fire in 1907, at which time it was sold to Walter Baker and Company.

The snuff mill on the Dorchester side in the Village was torn down in 1790 and a new paper mill built in its place. This mill passed through several hands, and was leased to Tileston and Hollingsworth for many years. Eventually it was bought by Henry L. Pierce and incorporated into Walter Baker and Company. It was about forty feet by twenty-eight in size with two floors and an attic. At the lower dam on the Dorchester side the Preston chocolate mill continued to operate until it too was absorbed into Walter Baker and Company.

The River

The sawmill on the upper dam on the Milton side passed into the hands of Daniel Vose in 1792. Stone in 1766 had sold his share to Wentworth, who at about that same time executed an indenture with Daniel Leeds, then owner of the grist mill on the Dorchester side, binding himself and his heirs never to build a grist mill on the Milton side. Despite this, a grist mill appeared there before many years had passed, apparently included in the old sawmill structure. In 1817 the building was sold to Francis Brimley, who altered it to grind and process drugs, medicines and dye-stuffs. He also fixed up a machine to saw veneers, supposedly the first sawed by power in this country. In 1827 the mill burned down, but was soon rebuilt, and the drug and dye business continued. In 1850 it was replaced by two new mills, one chocolate, the other grist, the former operated by Webb and Twombly and the latter by the Gannett family until both were finally taken over by Walter Baker and Company.

We do not know very much about what these old mills looked like, except that we can be sure that the grist mill differed very little from some still running today in Virginia.⁴ I think that most of them looked not unlike small barns, but had more windows. Probably they had only a single story, except for the paper mills, which had two. In 1813 Edmund Baker built a forty foot square stone mill with three floors, but I believe that until after the Civil War all the other mills in the Village were of wooden construction.

The water wheels were of the old-fashioned kind made of wood, and almost certainly of the undershot variety. Snow and ice were a source of great annoyance to mill owners who operated such wheels in New England, and they sometimes enclosed them within the mill building or inside a lean-to shed in order to secure more protection from the weather. Examination of Mather Withington's crude map of the Village in 1793 leads me to believe that Daniel Vose's paper mill then had its wheel within the buildings, but that the other mills had them built outside, except for the sawmill. Because of the relatively high speed needed for the up-and-down saw, this kind of

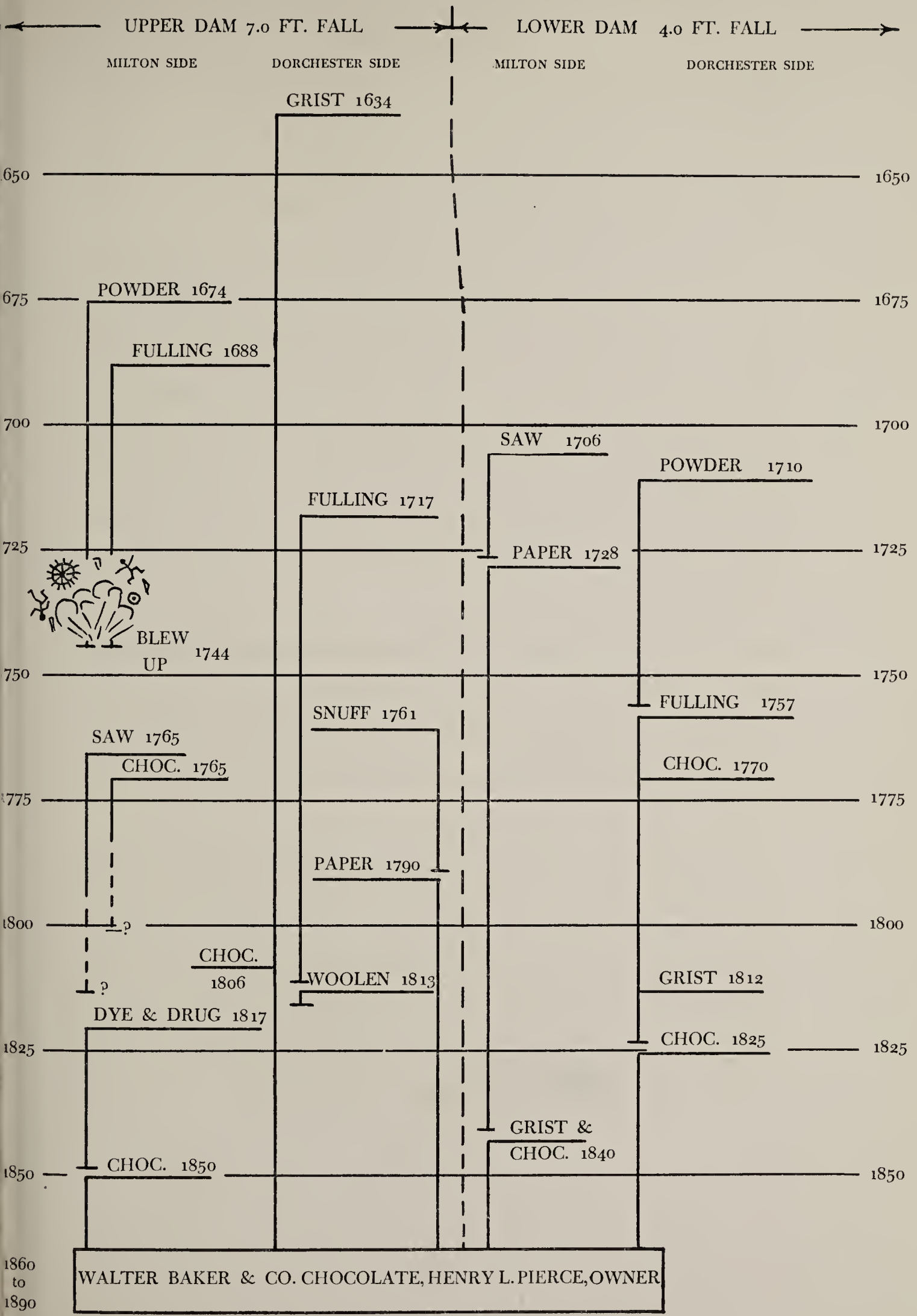
4. The mill which I believe is the best example still in existence of a small Colonial grist mill is the one at Stratford Hall in Virginia. The Sturbridge Village mill is of a later period, while the mill built by Henry Ford near the Wayside Inn is about as unlike a typical New England Village grist mill as it was possible to make it.

History of Milton

mill at this period always had a special wheel, called a "flutter wheel" on account of the noise it made, which was built into the foundations of the mill. In 1805 Edmund Baker installed the first wooden "tub" wheels used in this vicinity. This type of water wheel was the first crude ancestor of the modern turbine, and it was much less affected by icing conditions than was the old-fashioned undershot or overshot wheel. In 1817 the first iron "tub" wheels were put into the new paper mill built by Isaac Sanderson on the Milton side just downstream from the first paper mill. The old paper mill of 1728 was finally torn down in 1840. It was in this mill that Stephen Crane, Jr., had learned the papermaking art, and then taught it to his brother Zenas, who founded the great firm of Crane and Company. Dr. Jonathan Ware built a new mill on the old paper mill site, equipped with turbine water wheels and used it both as a grist mill and as a chocolate mill. It burned down in 1901.

Fish were unable to swim by the various dams in the Neponset, and by 1746 the up-river towns of Stoughton and Sharon⁵ started petitions to the Legislature requesting that fishways be built at all the dams. The mill owners naturally were opposed to wasting water that would otherwise have given them more power, and managed to block any action at that time. The matter dragged along until 1789 when an act of the Legislature authorized the construction of fishways, but they were to be built at the expense of the up-river towns. Stoughton and Sharon naturally were all against this method of financing, and again nothing happened. At last in 1791 fishways were put in and kept open between the latter part of April and the end of May. It does not appear that fish of any size ever took advantage of the fishways, or, if they did, they successfully eluded the up-river fishermen. In 1799 a new dam was built in the Village and the fishway closed. This really aroused the anger of Stoughton, Sharon and the newly created Canton, and visiting delegations, armed with axes and crowbars, descended upon the Neponset Village dams in the dark of the moon. Of course somebody talked, and the Milton owners heard or suspected something, and organized their workmen to

5. Actually Sharon did not become a separate town until 1765.



History of Milton

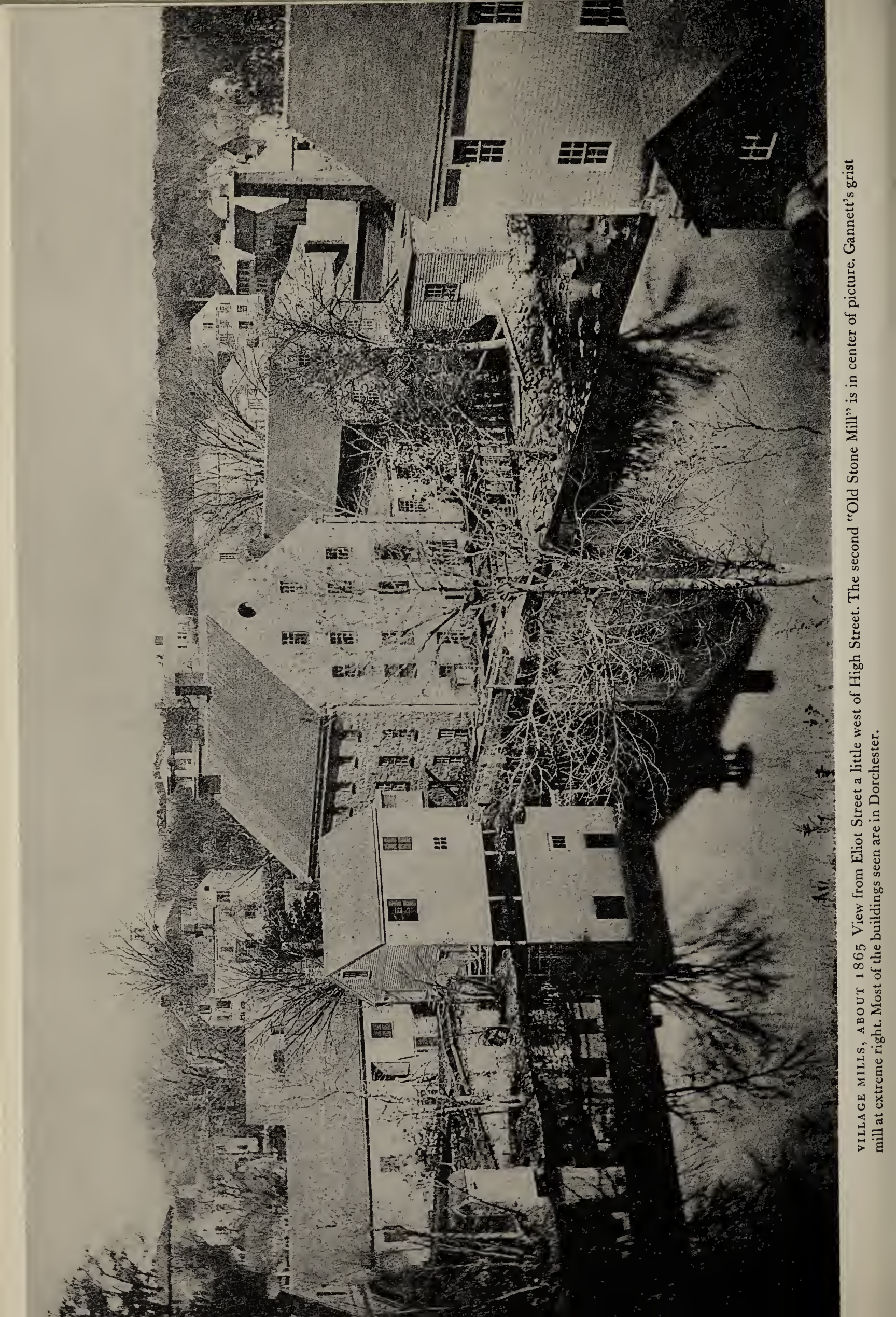
act as a welcoming committee. Tradition has it that many an up-country visitor did not have to wait for his Saturday night bath, but took it then and there in the mill pond. I do not know how many of these forays were made, but there evidently were more than one. Recourse was again had to law, which was both unsuccessful and costly to the up-river towns, and the quest for fishways was finally abandoned for good.

When the water power at a dam is divided among two or more mill owners, it is an invitation to lawsuits. At Neponset Village there were various agreements among the proprietors which allocated the water with certain priorities in times of low flow, and these appear to have been observed. Another factor which would cause trouble was the backing-up of water from a downstream mill into the tailrace of an upstream mill, and this became increasingly important as the desire for more power encouraged the utilization of all possible falls in a river. There was evidently a period of many lawsuits on the lower Neponset during the years between 1822 and 1826, from which only the lawyers profited, and agreements appear to have finally been reached out of court.

Very early in the settlement of Massachusetts Bay the Neponset was utilized as a source of power for the corn mill, but it was not until some two generations later that the real value of the water power at Neponset Village began to be appreciated. Initially the progress of industrial development in the Boston area was slow, and the only mills were those needed to process the local products, the Indian corn and rye, and the homespun woolen cloth.

I like to think of the three basic mills, grist, saw, and fulling, as the "homespun mills". They were necessary to a normal and reasonably efficient civilization based primarily on the level of the farm. They allowed an economy of labor in the processing of the essentials of a comfortable agricultural life, and, when complemented by the blacksmith and a supply of iron bars, they fulfilled all the basic needs of the community. Mills other than these three represent, to some extent at least, an approach to an industrial civilization. As I previously explained, Milton had no real need of the second of these "homespun mills", the sawmill, because of lumber brought from down East





VILLAGE MILLS, ABOUT 1865 View from Eliot Street a little west of High Street. The second "Old Stone Mill" is in center of picture. Gannett's grist mill at extreme right. Most of the buildings seen are in Dorchester.

The River

by water. If we consider the powder mill as being purely fortuitous, the adventure of Boston capitalists, and not really the result of normal development, we can say that until 1710, when the slitting mill appeared, Milton's mills were of the "homespun" variety, and that industry was initiated on this river during the first quarter of the eighteenth century. Six years earlier the first "industrial" mill appeared on the neighboring Charles River, an iron works, and this date can perhaps be taken as the starting point of the rise of industry, as opposed to hand-powered crafts, in the Boston area.⁶

Industrial growth continued on both rivers, but the Neponset gained and maintained a lead over the Charles, at least until the time of Jefferson's Embargo. The Milton paper mill represented a successful attempt to produce locally, and solely from local materials, an essential article which hitherto had necessarily been imported from abroad. Moreover the mill produced, not for the locality alone, as did the "homespun" mills, but for a much larger area. The snuff mill and the chocolate mills did the same, as they produced for the Boston market, but were located in Milton because of the water power opportunities. Thus the Village was becoming an industrial center, finally accomplished in its most complete form when Henry L. Pierce combined all the mills and all the water power into a single industrial unit. Well before that time, however, we had a highly industrialized river extending from the Sumner dam near Brush Hill to tide water, with all of its mills, except the grist mill, producing for other than local consumption. By 1812 the Neponset furnished power to a most important industrial development. It is possible that it may have been equalled and even slightly exceeded in size by the industry of the Blackstone River at Pawtucket, Rhode Island, but otherwise I have found no record of any rival worthy of serious consideration. The great industrial awakening of this country came during and after the War of 1812; before then little industry existed, and that only in a few areas, of which the Neponset Valley was probably the most important. Soon the Industrial Revolution was sweeping along the Atlantic Seaboard, and great establishments such as the Lowell textile mills were springing up

6. Edward P. Hamilton, "Early Industry Of The Neponset And The Charles", *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.* 1954, gives further data on these old mills.

History of Milton

on the major rivers. Milton, however, had already utilized its water power to the fullest extent, and no further growth was possible. The Milton mills thus became of minor consequence, and only the coming of the steam engine and later of electric power would allow them, as the Walter Baker Chocolate Mills, again to become of industrial importance.

Walter Baker died in 1852, and his stone chocolate mill on the Dorchester side was taken over by his brother-in-law, Sidney B. Williams, who lived only for another two years. Henry L. Pierce, who had been a clerk for both Baker and Williams, hired the mill in 1854 and carried on the business. He was the son of Jesse Pierce of Stoughton, who had taught at various Milton public schools from 1814 to 1818. Col. Pierce, for he was commanding officer of the 2nd Massachusetts Regiment in 1815, started a private school in the front yard of today's 69 Canton Avenue in 1819. He married a granddaughter of Daniel Vose, and returned to Stoughton in 1824. His son Henry came back to Neponset Village, living on the Dorchester side, while the younger son Edward, after completing his training as a lawyer, settled in Milton, where he was moderator of the Town Meeting for many years, as was later his son, Charles S. Pierce.

Henry L. Pierce made a great success of Walter Baker and Company, of which he remained the sole owner, and eventually he took over all the little mills in Milton Village, and incorporated them into his great chocolate factory. After Dorchester was merged with Boston, Mr. Pierce served twice as mayor of that city, and later as a congressman. He made a great fortune, most of which he left to Harvard, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and the Museum of Fine Arts. After his death in 1896, Walter Baker and Company became a corporation owned largely by residents of Milton, but it was finally sold in 1927 to the General Foods Co.

The Village had its various little local industries, such as the large tannery owned by General Moses Whitney in the early 1800's, and the carriage shop of Strangman & Co. of later years, but they were hardly different from similar operations in many another New England town. As the years went on, the lower Neponset became a paper-mill river, except for the chocolate mills at the mouth, and continued as such until newer methods of power

The River

production and greatly increased demands for power made the little waterfalls of the Neponset of relatively minor economic value.

It was said in an earlier chapter that the bridge at Neponset Village was for many years the only one across the river. It was probably in about 1733 that the first public bridge was built at Mattapan, although the mill owners probably had one for their own use somewhat earlier. There was, of course, also a short bridge over the canal, or so-called "trench", which fed the water to the mills. At the lower end of the Fowl Meadows there had been some sort of farm bridge, called Hubbard's, in the early 1700's, and in 1759 the ancestor of the present Paul's Bridge was erected. The oldest part of today's bridge dates from 1850, when a two-arched stone bridge was built at the joint expense of Milton and Dedham.

The first bridge at today's Neponset Circle was erected as a toll bridge by a private company in 1803 or 1804, and became a public highway in 1858. The growth of Railway Village, today's East Milton, as the result of the expanding granite business, led in 1837 to the building of the first Granite Avenue bridge.

The old bridge in Milton Village, built in about 1660, was finally replaced in 1765 by a new one on the site of today's bridge. The Dorchester and Milton Branch Railroad Co. was building its line to Milton and Mattapan in 1847, and the level of Adams Street was raised in order to put the track in a short tunnel. This required that the bridge should be raised some four and a half feet, and two new stone arches were built which are still in use today. The railway bridge across the Neponset was of course built at this same time.

All the bridges below Adams Street were and still are drawbridges,⁷ although there is little occasion to open them today. Water traffic was of great importance in the early days, and the Town Landing in tidal waters right in the Village was of great assistance to the commercial growth of the town. The earliest landing was at Gulliver's Creek in the marshes at East Milton, and part of Squantum Street was originally built to connect it with Adams Street. There is an interesting little story in connection with this landing.

7. Except for the Expressway bridge now building.

History of Milton

Some fifty years ago a sewer was being constructed along Adams Street, and the excavations near the end of Squantum Street turned up some limestone rocks containing fossils. These were taken to William L. W. Field, then biology master at Milton Academy, and later to be its headmaster for many years. Mr. Field had them identified at Harvard as coming from only one single place in the entire world, the valley of the River Seine in France. Long years ago some little brig had loaded ballast at Le Havre or nearby, and had finally discharged it at the Gulliver Creek landing place, whence it was carried to help fill a mudhole in Adams Street.

There was another landing farther up the river at the foot of today's Forbes road, where an old stone jetty can still be seen. This was really more of a shipyard than a landing place, I believe. The uppermost and most important of the landing places was at the head of tidewater in the Village, where the remains of Godfrey's Coal Yard and the Yacht Club now are. This was formally established by law as a Town Landing in 1658 and was in active use for many years. Ships of fair size could come from overseas right up to the landing, if they watched the tide, but I am sure that by far the major part, if not all of the traffic, consisted of little coasting craft. Such little ships, sloops, ketches, brigs, and snows, with some schooners as time went on, were well able to go beyond soundings, and I believe that many a load of West Indies goods, sugar, molasses, and rum, came direct from Jamaica to Daniel Vose's wharf at the landing. From there Vose's wagons carried the goods to the various country stores up the Neponset Valley. His store at Milton tidewater was an important wholesaling establishment that served a large portion of the area to the south and to the west.

After the death of Daniel Vose in 1807 the river traffic became much less, until it was revived by the granite business. King's Chapel in Boston was built of Quincy granite between 1749 and 1752, but this came from boulders lying on the surface of the Quincy Commons. Quarried granite was first produced in 1815, but the real start of the trade came in 1825 when the Bunker Hill Monument was undertaken. It was only after 1803 that tools and methods of quarrying the hard rock had been developed. Gridley Bryant of Scituate was the master builder at the laying of the cornerstone of the

The River

monument, and he conceived the idea of constructing a railway to get the stone blocks from the Quincy quarry to scows in the Neponset River, whence they could be towed to Charlestown. He obtained a charter from the Massachusetts Legislature in 1826, and built the three and a half miles of track in six months. The original rails were of wood, faced on top with iron plates, but these later were replaced with granite tracks carrying iron plates. The first cars were made with four very large wheels, and the granite blocks were carried on a low platform hung below the axles. These cars were built in the stone house which is still standing on the northeast corner of Adams and Squantum Streets. The railroad ran downhill most of the way, and the trip was made largely by gravity, assisted in places by the horses, who would afterwards pull the empty cars back up the grade. Such railroads had long been common in England, but this was the first in America, and while Quincy and Milton must share equally in the claim, the true credit for it belongs to Gridley Bryant, its designer, and perhaps quite as much to the man who had the courage to make the construction possible, Col. Thomas Handasyd Perkins. His sister Margaret married Milton's Ralph Bennet Forbes, and was the mother of Robert Bennet (Commodore) Forbes, John Murray Forbes, and Mary A. Cunningham, who established the Trust Fund which operates Milton's Cunningham Park.

The stone for Bunker Hill Monument came from the Quincy quarry, where Solomon Willard was devising new methods to get out the granite, but most of it was cut to size and finished in sheds located in Milton. This new industry resulted in a settlement springing up almost overnight at today's East Milton Square. It was called Railway Village, and was the place where the Granite Railway crossed the Plymouth Road. The business of the Granite Railway Co. continued for many years, and the railroad itself lasted until about 1866. It was abandoned for a short time, and then bought by the Old Colony Railroad Company, who in 1871 opened the Plymouth Branch over part of the old roadbed. Little if any actual quarrying was done in Milton until almost 1840, but there were cutting sheds in the Village and its vicinity, as well as in East Milton.

The granite business had brought many alien workers to the quarries and

History of Milton

stonesheds, some newly arrived immigrants, but many transient workers from New Hampshire, who came to this vicinity each spring for a season's work. Most of these men worked and lived in Quincy, where they exercised a very considerable force in politics, voting more or less as a block in Town Meeting, despite the fact that they were really non-residents. Milton appears to have been spared this problem, but did suffer from one which, if actually minor in nature, was a source of considerable annoyance. Sixty or seventy years ago Quincy granted no licenses to sell liquor, nor did Milton. Every Saturday scores of husky stonecutters and quarrymen, yearning to "wet their whistles", marched from Quincy over Adams Street and Milton Hill to the nearest source of the cup that cheered, which was Hotel Milton, in Dorchester where the Walter Baker Office Building now stands. So far no harm was done, but when the homeward trek started, troubles began, and many a Milton matron looking out of her window on the Sabbath morning would see a quarryman still sleeping it off on her lawn, or draped over the stone-wall. That is why today you still see some Adams Street walls with sharp stones forming their tops. Inebriated stoneworkers were probably the major cause for establishing the first Milton police force.

There was shipbuilding of some sort on the Neponset as early as the middle of the seventeenth century, but we have no detailed knowledge about either the vessels or their builders. Certainly the boats were small in size, probably intended only for coastal traffic and local fishing. Nehemiah Bourne, who owned much of the land on Milton Hill north of Adams Street, and who later became an admiral under Cromwell, very probably was connected with early shipbuilding on the Neponset. Anthony Newton, who lived near Gulliver's Creek, was probably a shipwright, as were Walter Morey and Nicholas Ellen. One would assume that their vessels were so small that they were built in and around Gulliver's Creek in the vicinity of the landing place located there. Robert Badcock came to Milton in 1648, and two of his sons, Enoch and George, became shipbuilders. Samuel Sewall wrote in his diary for 2 September 1695: "This day Mr. George Badcock, Ship-Carpenter, falls from a ship he was helping to build at Charlestown, breaks his neck and

The River

three of his ribs, of which he dies. His brother dyed in the spring at Milton, by a like fall; which renders it very awful—". Evidently those were ships of some size, or a fall would probably not have been fatal. Enoch Badcock's shipyard was at the foot of Forbes Road where the old stone pier is still to be seen. His son, William, followed the same trade, and may have continued to operate the yard.

We know little about what sort of craft were first built along the Neponset. Dr. Teele says that shallops of thirty to forty tons were built near Gulliver's Creek. The term "shallop" is most indefinite, and covers almost any small craft from a whaleboat to a small sloop. I do not believe that we will be very far from the truth if we think of the early shallops built here as being essentially large ship's boats without a deck, and with a single mast carrying a square sail. Such a vessel was suited to the immediate needs of the times, hauling goods around the Bay area, working up and down the tidal estuaries, and fishing along the shore. In short, it was a handy work boat, small enough to row when necessary, and large enough for most local requirements. This would be quite a bit smaller than Dr. Teele's "thirty or forty tons", a size probably not reached until a little later when decked pinnaces were undertaken. By the end of the 1600's most of the vessels built here were probably little sloops and ketches, say from forty to sixty feet on deck, and of sixty to a hundred tons. In 1693 Enoch Badcock built the ship *Mary and Sarah*, at a cost of £540. 15s. 0d. This price would indicate a burden approaching two hundred tons and a length of perhaps eighty feet on the deck. This was a good-sized ship for the period, able to go anywhere on the seven seas. In 1709 Gov. Dudley reported to the Lords of Trade that there were only twenty ships owned in Massachusetts that were over a hundred tons. It would thus appear that the Neponset was then producing vessels as large as those built anywhere in the Bay area.

We have no further details covering Neponset shipbuilding until we come to 1765 when Daniel Vose and Joseph Fenno built a schooner and a brig, quite an accomplishment for two young men who had only recently started in business for themselves. Within a year or two Fenno was knocked overboard by the boom of one of these craft while tacking up the Neponset, and

History of Milton



VIEW FROM ADAMS STREET AT HUTCHINSON'S FIELD, 1885

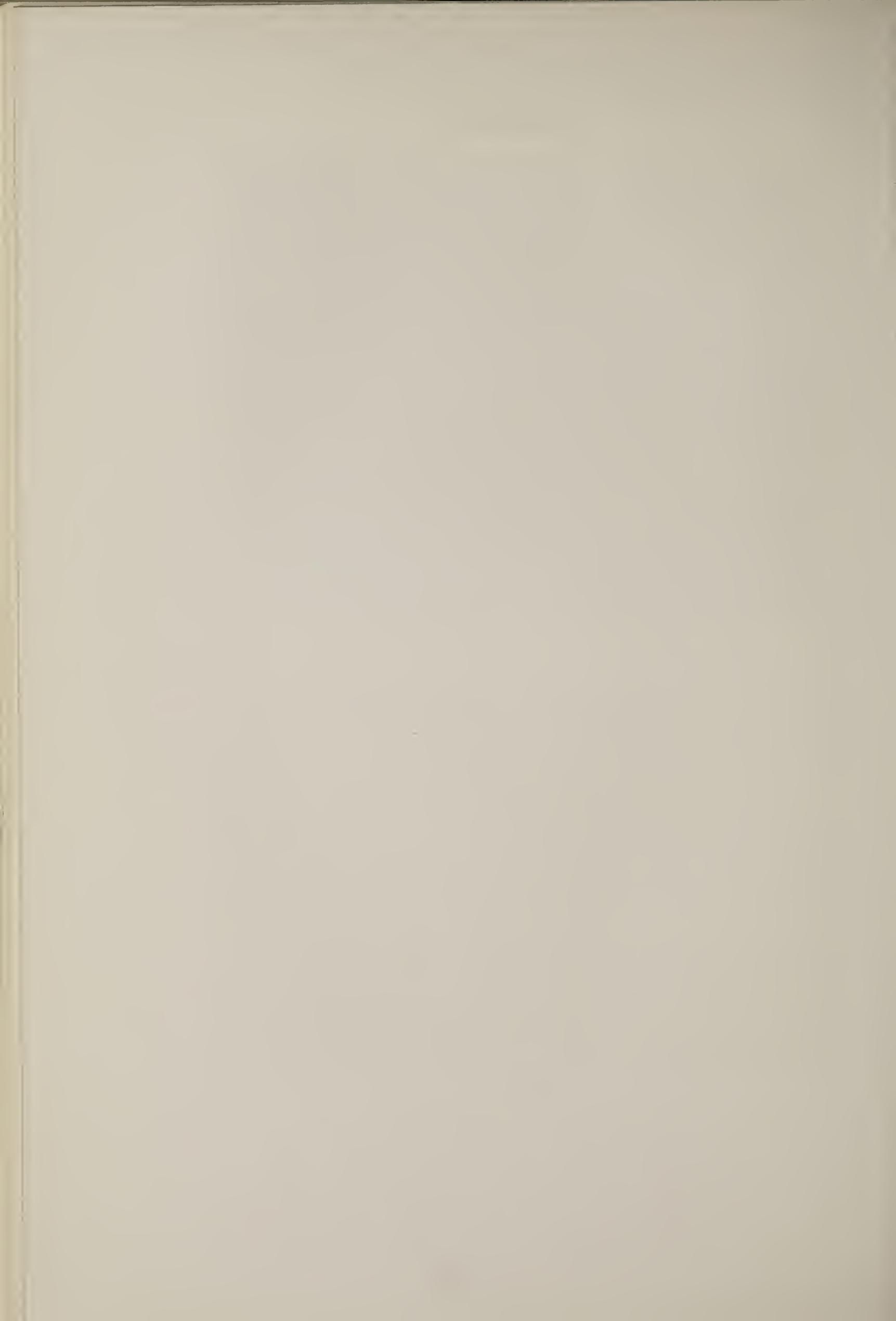
was drowned. Again for a number of years we have no knowledge of any shipbuilding, but this was the Revolutionary period, and it seems probable that little if any work was done. In about 1785 Daniel Briggs, shipbuilder of Pembroke, came to Milton, and lived for many years in a house on Adams Street opposite the head of Churchill's Lane. He set up a shipyard where the Badcocks had formerly operated, and over a period of thirty years built a total of thirty-three vessels, many of them of considerable size. Briggs' largest ship was too much for the Neponset, and he moved his operations over to Quincy for its construction.

Six of the ships he built in Milton were over three hundred tons, good-sized vessels for the period; the largest, the *Huntress* of 1811, was almost four hundred tons, and one hundred and ten feet long. His last ship, the *Milton*, built in 1815, became a New Bedford whaler in 1831, and was registered as late as 1883, when she was sold abroad and all further record

The River

lost. That, so far as I have been able to learn, was the end of shipbuilding in Milton.

For many years there has been no real traffic on the Neponset. The coming of the railroad and the gradual disappearance of the coastwise shipping marked the beginning of the end. The granite business gradually lessened, smaller items were shipped by rail, the Granite Railway ceased operations, and soon there was nothing to export that required water transport. As long as coal remained in general use it came to Godfrey's Wharf by water, but the advent of oil as a fuel eventually changed this. A certain amount of lumber still comes by water to the yard of Barney and Carey at the Granite Avenue bridge, but this is the last feeble remnant of the old river traffic, once so important to Milton Village. The Neponset at tidewater today is merely a place where pleasure boats are moored, waiting for a weekend or a holiday before venturing out into the waters of Boston Bay.



The Schools

IT is surprising how little we really know of the Milton schools in the early days. The first records of the Town are scanty and brief, but, except for years 1672-73, 1684, and 1687-88, there is record of a Town Meeting in every year since 1666. I have been unable to find mention of either school or schoolteacher until March of 1700, a date 66 years after Milton's first settlement and 38 years after its establishment as a Town.¹ From this time on, reference to schools appears relatively often in the records, and before long practically every year. Milton of course must have had some sort of schooling from the very first, and it probably followed the general New England pattern of the period.

The Massachusetts ordinance of 1642 required that all children and apprentices should be able to read and to know the capital laws and the principles of religion. Thus we have from the earliest times a basic requirement of literacy. In 1647 another law was passed which required every town of 50 families to have a teacher, and one of 100 or more a grammar school. This last was not at all what the name connotes to us today, but was a college preparatory school, teaching Latin and Greek to boys who could already read and write.² It was probably not until about 1700 that Milton had the 50 families which necessitated a school, but the basic law of literacy still applied.

1. From 1634 until 1662 Milton was part of Dorchester, and would have used Dorchester schools. During this period Dorchester seems to have had no school anywhere near the settlement at Unquity, nor have I been able to find any Dorchester record which concerns schooling for the Milton region.

2. Harvard entrance requirements, beyond good moral character, were solely Latin and Greek as late as 1775. At some unknown date between then and 1821 geography and fundamental arithmetic were added.

History of Milton

During the first 38 years of the Town's existence this requirement was probably met largely by home instruction, and there is some reason to believe that the minister may also have acted as schoolteacher. Rev. Peter Thacher's diary entry for 21 October 1680 records his agreeing to teach a boy to write, and an earlier minister—Rev. Thomas Migill—is known to have taught the children, but this may have been only in religious matters.

We are apt to think of school and schoolhouse as one and the same, but as late as the time of the Revolution we find rooms for school purposes being rented by the Milton Selectmen. We know that the Town had two schools in 1700 with Ebenezer Clapp as schoolmaster in the west end of town, and Thomas Vose, the Town Clerk, master at the east end, and we also know that there was no schoolhouse, unless the old meeting house on Adams Street at Churchill's Lane was being used for one. There is an apparently well substantiated tradition that this first church building was once so used, and such was customary elsewhere.

In 1712 the Town voted to build a school, but nothing happened. This is not unusual, for the early records show a surprising number of cases where the Town voted action, and that was the end of the matter. By 1721, however, we find two schoolhouses, one at Churchill's Lane and Adams Street (probably the old Meeting House refurbished), the other on Brush Hill Road, a little south of present Metropolitan Avenue and on the west side of the road. These two schools were taught by the same schoolmaster on a rotating or "moving" basis. "Moving" schools, as opposed to fixed, were very common in the 1700's. A school might keep for three or six months in one schoolhouse, or in a room hired in a private home, then move on elsewhere for another three months, and so on around the circuit. In some towns it took a "moving" school as much as three years to complete its round. Such a school allowed the economy of a single schoolteacher, but it meant little schooling and long vacations. I cannot determine whether or not it was usual for the pupils to follow the Milton school as it moved. In some towns it was done, in others forbidden. In January 1734-35 the Town changed its mind, and decreed a single fixed school "in the center of the Town on Meeting House Road, . . . between the stone bridge and the pound". Meeting

The Schools

House Road is certainly Canton Avenue, on which the pound was located, the one of this period being nearly opposite 730 Canton Avenue. If we assume the "stone bridge" to have been over Pine Tree Brook at the head of Blue Hills Parkway,³ we would then get a school location very near the exact center of the town, and one which would not be over a 2½ mile walk for any child. I can find no record or tradition of a schoolhouse along this part of Canton Avenue, yet the Town Meeting records for the period 1735-63 very clearly indicate that there was a single central school. Between 1755 and 1757 various unsuccessful attempts were made to re-establish a "moving" school. In 1763 the Town decided on three schools, one at each end of the town as well as that one already existing in the middle, and the following year voted to hire quarters rather than to build. It would seem that nothing was done until 1768 when a schoolhouse was built on Churchill's Lane opposite the cemetery, another on Canton Avenue a little south of Atherton Street, and a third, sixteen by twenty feet in size, in Scotch Woods at the easterly end of Harland Street. In 1769 we find a reference as to what should be "done to the old school house", which one we do not know.

The Massachusetts law still required a grammar school for a town of 100 families, and Milton reached this size some time shortly before 1760 so far as can be estimated. It was essentially a farming community of no great wealth, and the inhabitants would not have been much concerned with a school preparing for Harvard. In 1768 we find the Town considering the question of how the grammar school should be kept.⁴ The previous schools had all been reading and writing schools for the boys. The girls, if they went at all, were concerned only with reading.

Throughout these years there had been another kind of school of which

3. This is a somewhat dubious assumption, as there is reason to believe that this bridge was built of wood. No other bridge, however, seems to meet the requirements.

4. In 1728 the Selectmen were directed to provide a grammar school, but there is no further mention of it until 1768. After this date there are several references to the grammar school, so it can be presumed established at about this time. The legal requirement could be met by having a schoolmaster capable of teaching Latin and Greek, should any pupil appear and request it. Thus a grammar school might at some periods be potential rather than actual and yet meet the requirements of the law. When actually kept, it might really consist only of a boy or two sitting in the regular schoolhouse and working on their classics under the regular schoolmaster.

History of Milton

few Milton records remain. The dame school was originally privately operated, and designed perhaps as much to keep small children out from under foot as to teach them. Sometimes a town supported a dame school partially and sometimes entirely. There is but a single early Town record of a dame school in Milton, in 1728, and none thereafter until 1800. It is evident from Rev. Peter Thacher's diary that there was one in Milton in 1684. The usual arrangement was for children to enter at three or four years of age and to remain until they were about six, at which time they could read words of two syllables and were thus qualified to enter the schoolmaster's reading and writing school. Much of the school day was spent wriggling on a bench with nothing to do except about twenty minutes of actual instruction morning and afternoon. After their lessons the children were often put to little chores to keep them busy, such as shelling beans and similar jobs. A Mrs. Livermore, who went to a Boston dame school in the early 1800's, remembered being sent daily to the grocery store to fetch the teacher her morning "shot" of rum.

The girls seldom went beyond the dame school in those days, although by the end of the eighteenth century we find their attendance at the reading and writing schools becoming quite general. There were many small private schools throughout New England where girls could obtain a good education, but these were only for the daughters of the well-to-do. The average boy was supposed to read and write, and, as time went on, also to cipher simple sums, but a girl need only read and sew. Rachel Smith (1735-1821), wife of Daniel Vose, a prosperous Milton merchant, and daughter of the local paper-mill owner, had to sign her name with a cross.

The schools of the eighteenth century were free in that they were open to all, but some charge to the pupil was always involved. In Milton the basic cost of the schools seems to have been borne entirely by the Town after 1712. Many other towns exacted small fees from the parents of the pupils, or assessed those using the schools for their support, but Milton appears to have required only the furnishing of firewood by the pupils—a standard requirement in all early schools. Schoolbooks and paper were supplied by the pupils, for the slate did not come in until about the time of the Revolution.

The Schools

It was not until a State law passed in 1884 required provision of schoolbooks by the municipality that schools became really free.

The schoolmaster in those days was not overpaid,⁵ and he worked for what he got. His position was an honored one, second only to the minister, but his pay seems to have usually been in the order of one-third to at most one-half that of the minister, and largely in "country pay"—corn meal, pumpkins, wool and such. He probably saw very little hard money. He worked throughout the year for long hours six days a week, and was often expected to assist in church on the Sabbath. Hingham in 1791 allowed the schoolmaster four days a year for his vacation, but also generously included a whole extra day to attend Town Meeting, and two days for militia duty, as well as another day here and there. Salem in 1770 gave theirs no vacation at all, but allowed him the balance of the week after Harvard Commencement—probably, one is prone to assume, in which to sober up after drowning his sorrows at his class reunion.

A grammar-school master, of necessity, had to be a college graduate, and teaching was often taken up for a year or two by a young minister to fill in until he could get a parish. Roger Sherman, who signed the Declaration of Independence for Connecticut, taught in Milton schools as a young man, as did Rev. Jeremy Belknap, the Boston minister who founded the Massachusetts Historical Society. The reading and writing schoolmaster did not of course have to be a college man, but he enjoyed a position of repute in the community. Often the master was boarded around as part of his pay, and he probably did not always fare too well. I find one teacher referring in disgust to the "squn" he knew he would get too much of—pork liver, sweetbreads, kidneys and other bits of offal all fried up together.

At the start of the Revolution we find the Town maintaining three schools and the grammar school, but in about 1778 the East School near the Burying Place burned. The next few years apparently produced an acrimonious dispute as to where the East School should be rebuilt. The Town Records bring down to us only the bare bones of the votes, but from the various re-

5. In 1727 John Dickerman was hired to keep a reading and writing school at £30 a year. At this same date the Rev. Peter Thacher was getting £110.

History of Milton

versals of votes it is evident that the Town Meeting entered into the spirit of the occasion and had a good time for itself during this period. This school, twenty by twenty-four feet, apparently was at last built in 1791 near the "Liberty Pole",⁶ and the site was at the easterly edge of Hutchinson's Field on Adams Street—a logical place for a liberty pole, the top of the steep village hill. In 1793 there were four schools—Hutchinson's Field, Brush Hill, Middle Street (Canton Avenue), and Scotch Woods, as well as a grammar school at some unknown location.

From the earliest days the schools were a responsibility delegated by the Town to the Selectmen. Year after year we find the Selectmen exercising full control over the schools, sometimes assisted (or hindered) by specific votes of the Town. Suddenly in 1764 a new idea appears. Town Meeting this year appointed a committee to "see what is best to be done relating to schooling . . ." This committee reported at the May meeting following, but the records are silent as to just what was said. It must, however, have been concerned with building schoolhouses, for the July 1764 meeting refused to reconsider a vote of this nature made in May. At the same time the Selectmen were again directed to manage the schools. A similar committee was resorted to in 1767, and in 1779; then after a lapse of years this committee was appointed every year from 1782 until 1787. Here is the genesis of the Milton School Committee, a body which had appeared in Dorchester as early as 1645, but was a new development here. In 1790 this committee was again appointed, and in April of that year they came in with momentous recommendations.

The outlying districts of any town usually felt unhappy over the schools, believing that they were operated primarily by the center of population for its own convenience (this was probably only too true), and that their children were forced to walk too far. In 1755 we find Milton Town Meeting voting against allowing one part of the Town to be relieved from the school assessment so that it could furnish its own school. The "moving" school was

6. In 1778 the vote said "near the Liberty Pole"; before the school was finally built it was "where the Liberty Pole lately stood".

The Schools

an attempt to overcome the dissatisfaction of the outskirts of the town, but it did not succeed. The long argument continued over the years, as is shown by Milton's various votes for and against "moving schools", fixed schools, and schools at certain specific locations. This problem was, of course, common to all country towns, and finally resulted in the Massachusetts law of 1789, which allowed a town to break itself up into separate school districts, each run by its own district committee. These later developed into the Prudential Committees.⁷ The 1789 law is not entirely clear as to just how far the decentralization and delegation of powers could go, but subsequent laws broadened and clarified the matter. In Milton the Town voted the school budget and apportioned it among the districts, which then spent it as they saw fit. In some towns the delegation of power went further, and we find there the genesis of today's Middle West school district—a self-operating and taxing authority with no relationship to town or county. Milton, however, always kept the purse strings in the hands of Town Meeting.

In the April meeting of 1790 the committee appointed the month before recommended action under the 1789 law, and the Town so voted. The management of the schools, in all except the total amount to be spent, thus passed out of the control of the Town and into the hands of the four school districts for better or for worse. It turned out to be for the worse.

We have now come to a good point to pause and learn a little of what these schools taught and how they went about it. Unfortunately this can be summarized by the statement that they did not teach very much, and that the little which they did was perhaps not too well taught. On the other hand, these reading and writing schools during the 1700's were turning out boys that could read, write and do simple sums. In an illiterate world this was a very material accomplishment.⁸ The schoolhouse was a plain one-room building, in winter overheated at one end by a fireplace, and the opposite end as cold as charity. Iron stoves started to come in after the Revolution,

7. The Milton Prudential Committees, oddly enough, each appear to have consisted of only one man.

8. Studies have shown that some 95% of Massachusetts men of the 1700's could at least sign their names.

History of Milton

but the hot air furnace was still a luxury in 1850. The children sat and fidgeted on crude benches from seven in the morning until five in the evening, with an hour or so out at noon, while during the winter months the day was shortened an hour at each end. Much time was wasted. An average half-day's work might consist of writing one page in a copy book and doing a few simple sums. Much stress was put on reading loud and fast. One teacher's favorite remark was "Speak up there. Don't read like a mouse in[side] a cheese." Schools of course varied greatly with individual teachers, despite visitations by Selectmen and committees of citizens, but in too many cases the pupils "dawdled the long day through" and accomplished very little. Discipline was demanded and obtained. One of the rules under which the Dorchester school operated in 1645 stated: "And because the rodd of correction is an ordinance of God necessary sometymes to bee dispensed unto children . . . therefor . . . the schoolemaster . . . shall have full power to minister correction . . ." In addition to flogging with a birch switch, spanking with a leather strap, and hitting the hands with a ruler, we find mention of standing with one's nose wedged into the end of a split sapling.

I can learn almost nothing about the grammar school in Milton, but believe that it may never have existed as a separate entity. In 1785 it moved through three of the school districts and probably actually was merely a separate class in the reading and writing schools. In this year the settlement at Scotch Woods was allowed to keep its own school, and was excused from paying its share of the expense of the grammar school. Scotch Woods was, however, allowed to send its Latin scholars to the West School only when the grammar school had moved there in the course of its circuit. We also find that the Town supplied only the grammar school with its firewood. Milton was a farming town of no great wealth, and it is very unlikely that many boys would have wished to prepare for college or for the business world. If the grammar school began in 1768, the first college graduate to complete an education started at that time might have finished college some eight to ten years later, or in 1776-78. From the earlier of these dates until 1812 there were just ten Milton graduates of Harvard, or one every 3.6 years. Even if some of the pupils never went on to college, some flunked out, or were so

The Schools

misguided as to go to Yale, it is obvious that the load on the Milton grammar school system was not very onerous. After 1786 there is no further mention of the grammar school. The 1789 law lowered the requirements for such a school, which exempted Milton from the necessity of keeping one.

By the end of the 1700's, when prosperity was returning and the population fast increasing, there was generally no real opportunity for those who wished to advance beyond the three R's, but could not afford the cost of education offered by the rapidly growing number of small private schools. The "academy" was the new development which made the higher education more generally available. A few, such as Dummer, had been established by private endowment, but the typical academy of the period was a state-chartered and partially subsidized institution which, in effect, served as a county high school. Such was Milton Academy when first established.

Before further considering Milton Academy and the development of secondary education in the Town, it seems best to continue with the primary schools. In 1793 schools were operated in four wards or districts, and the wards were empowered each to elect their own committee to hire the teachers and buy the firewood. It is not clear whether those committees had other duties as well, or whether the Selectmen continued their general supervision. Next year's Town Meeting voted against a "woman's school" being established in the middle of the Town. In 1801 we find a vote of \$666 to be apportioned among the school districts, and spent by them as in previous years, with an additional \$30 for the Center School, to be spent under the control of the Selectmen. Evidently district management was not entirely to be trusted. Little of importance appears in the records for the next few years, but in 1810 a committee was appointed to consider the need for a free grammar school, and that seems to have been the end of the matter. This, of course, meant consideration of establishing a competitor to the Academy, now in operation for three years. In 1812 the two west wards were joined, and we find a most interesting vote of the Town which gave \$100 to assist the new West School District in building a schoolhouse. Thus the school is now built by the district, either through donations or by an assessed school tax paid by inhabitants of the district only. Here we have practically com-

History of Milton

plete decentralization. This was the "Old Brick" schoolhouse which stood on Blue Hill Avenue at Atherton Street and lasted until 1870.

By the late 1700's there was a growing demand for more schooling for the girls. I have not been able to find any specific record of this in Milton, but it was general elsewhere. In Medford, for instance, in 1766 the schoolmaster was to instruct the girls for two hours after the boys were dismissed, while in Dorchester in 1784 those girls who could read were allowed to attend the grammar school during the summer and fall months. Plymouth in 1793 had considerable discussion regarding a "female school", and the remarks of one opponent have fortunately been preserved for us. "The World has come to a pretty pass when wives and daughters would look over the shoulders of husbands and fathers and offer to correct . . . spelling . . ." A few years later we find that the education of girls was on nearly the same basis as that of boys, and by 1820 it was on equal footing in primary and secondary schools.

In 1808 Town Meeting was petitioned to establish a new school district at the Center, but it was not until twenty-five years later that this district, or "ward" as they were called in Milton, was authorized. The Town Meeting record of 1824 gives us our first glimpse of the curriculum then in force: "Orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, English grammar, geography, and good behavior". This represents real progress beyond the reading and writing and perhaps a little arithmetic of fifty years before.

The year 1826 brings the establishment of Milton's first formal school committee, but the record says nothing at all about its duties and powers, or its relationship with the existing district committees. In 1835 the Town was redistricted into five wards, all essentially of equal size based on pupil population, and we find the Town contributing \$150 to two of the new districts to assist them in building their school buildings. Four years later the Prudential Committees of the districts were empowered to select and contract with their teachers, something that they had been doing right along anyway. In 1893 the School Committee's annual report appears in the Town Meeting record for the first time, and from what it says and suggests we can obtain a fairly clear picture of the Committee's powers and duties in those days. We learn that school was kept in all five districts both summer and



"THE OLD BRICK" This schoolhouse was built in 1812 at Blue Hill Avenue and Atherton Street and torn down in 1870.

The Schools

winter, and that there were a total of 398 pupils, with slightly more boys than girls. The committee met with the Prudential Committees and teachers and attempted to secure agreement among them as to the schoolbooks to be used, purchased a supply of the books selected, and sold them to the pupils. In two or three cases they supplied children with these books without charge, and billed the Town for the cost. Finally they visited all schools at intervals throughout the year, usually working as subcommittees. The School Committee of those days thus appears to have been solely an advisory committee, examining the schools and reporting on them to the Town, with the single administrative duty of providing schoolbooks for sale to the pupils.

Let us now return and again take up the secondary schools where we left them at the end of the eighteenth century. By this time higher education was broadening beyond the basic Latin and Greek of the earlier days, wealth was increasing, and a need was arising for a school which could replace the old grammar school and prepare for college, and also act as a final finishing school for those who, while not destined for college, desired more education than that of the three R's alone. The school that developed to meet this need was the "academy", merely another name for what today we call the high school. In the 1790's Dummer and the two Phillips Academies were in existence, along with a number of others which were started in 1791-93, but various communities in the state still lacked such schools. Nathan Dane was convinced that schools of this sort should be available to all, and due very largely to his efforts the Legislature passed an act which provided for the establishment of academies in six Massachusetts counties, one of which was Norfolk. A town, in order to secure the county academy, must first raise \$3000 locally before it could be considered; then, if it should be selected, its academy would be chartered and endowed by the State with half a township of Maine land. Several Norfolk towns put in their claims for the school, but a legislative committee finally selected Milton, and in 1798 the Academy was chartered, and Edward H. Robbins elected President.

Originally it had been planned to locate the new school near the Village on land offered by Mr. Robbins, but it was finally decided to build in the vicinity of the Meeting House, and land was bought there. For the next eight

History of Milton



“THE OLD ACADEMY BUILDING”

years nothing at all happened, while the Maine land was being surveyed and a purchaser sought. This was at last accomplished by 1806, when the school building was started, and in the following year the “Old Academy” opened, with an entering class of twenty-three boys—later enlarged to twenty-eight—drawn from Milton and the surrounding towns. The boys from out of town boarded in some house in the vicinity or with the master in the “Academy House”, which stood on the corner of Canton Avenue and Thatcher Street, and later became a convalescent home run by the Unitarian Church.

When Robert Bennet Forbes was a very small boy, he was a student at Milton Academy and boarded with Deacon Isaac Gulliver in the old house which is still standing at 651 Canton Avenue. The Commodore, as Mr. Forbes was later known, recalled that the food was extremely simple, with much Indian pudding, many pans of baked beans, and some salt fish, but very little meat. This diet may have lacked much that we today believe to be essential, but the boy went to sea at thirteen, was a mate at sixteen, and master before he was twenty. He lived to be eighty-five.

For the next fifty-nine years the Academy operated as a local high school,

The Schools

with the addition of some boarding scholars from out of town. After about 1816 girls were admitted, but the school never grew very large; an attendance of about twenty-eight pupils was the average. The Academy had no endowment, all of its funds having been used up in buying the land and putting up the building, and it thus led a hand-to-mouth existence with the tuition fees the only source of income. Over the years it had its ups and downs, and a considerable turnover of teachers, but it served a most useful purpose and offered a practical secondary education on the one hand, or a college preparation on the other for those who desired it. The Academy ceased operations in 1866, leasing its school building to the Town, and putting its corporate charter into mothballs. Eventually the building was sold to the Town, torn down and a new High School building was erected in 1885, which in turn was incorporated into the Vose School structure of 1896, torn down in 1956.

There had been various private schools established in Milton in the early years of the last century, but most of them lasted but a very few years. There was a private school on Adams Street on the north side about halfway between Churchill's and Dudley Lanes, which was started by the Forbes family in about 1844. In 1884 the Academy charter was taken out of the limbo in which it had slumbered for eighteen years, and the trustees took this little school under their control as the beginnings of the new Academy. John M. Forbes secured part of what is now the Academy's land in 1884, and in the next year the school moved to Warren Hall, the building still standing at the corner of Randolph Avenue and Center Street.⁹ The Academy was continued for a few years more as a local private school, and then in 1888 started operations as a boarding school under the headmastership of Harrison Otis Apthorp. Its later growth into what it is today has been excellently covered by Dr. Hale,¹⁰ and there is no need to attempt to mention the Academy further in this history.

9. In recent years part of the Adams Street school building was moved up to the Unitarian Church to become the Children's Church. After 1884 one of the Adams Street school buildings was used for some years as a private school for small children, while the other was moved to East Milton, where it became a Baptist chapel.

10. Richard W. Hale, Jr., *Milton Academy, 1798-1948* (Milton, 1948).

History of Milton

In recent years some writers have stated that the early Massachusetts schools were the tools of the Puritan clergy, and that they were established and maintained solely for religious purposes. Nothing can be further from the truth. The early founders realized that an intelligent citizenry was necessary to a successful state. The fact that they were a homogeneous group who wished to reform the established Anglican Church would naturally result in schooling which would take their religious beliefs for granted, but the purpose of the elementary schools was purely preparation for good citizenship. In the case of the grammar schools the matter was somewhat different. The purpose of the early Massachusetts grammar school was to prepare for the college at Cambridge, and in the earliest days Harvard existed essentially for the purpose of training the clergy. The growth and prosperity of the colony, however, soon altered this, and a Harvard education was sought by many who had neither the desire nor the intention of entering the ministry. By 1700, when we get our first glimpse of Milton schools, the days of the old Puritan theocracy were over, and any religious dictatorship would have been impossible. Milton, as will be noted in the chapter on the churches, appears to have enjoyed during the Provincial and Federalist periods a uniformity of religious belief, or at least an absence of dissenting opinions, rather unusual for a New England town. This might have been to some extent reflected in the local schools, but any religious teaching would have been merely a tacit acceptance of the status quo rather than a proselyting operation. The Massachusetts Constitution of 1780 decisively ended the possibility of any denominational religious education in the public schools, even if the Town should have desired it.

The first formal report of the School Committee that I can find was made in March of 1839 as the result of a state law passed the previous year. From this time on a report was made every year, although some of the earlier ones were never printed and exist only in manuscript form. At this date we find that the schools were kept summer and winter in all five districts, some with men and some with women teachers. A few notes from some other of the earliest Committee reports are of interest. In 1841 the members believed that there was room for considerable improvement, particularly in the Pruden-

The Schools

tial Committees, and they objected to the pupils "lounging in one after another" after school exercises had commenced. They also were pained to learn that some teachers were receiving "threats of personal chastisement" from irate parents. Another complaint, and one that we perhaps have felt existed only in our generation, was that "the crying sin of the times [this, mind you, was in 1844] was the laxity of parental authority"! An interesting description of one of our Town schools is given in the 1843 report, "a bad location, a miserable house, ill constructed seats on the benches of which are written the roguery of ages, a bad ventilated room, a room made gloomy by dust and smoke and adorned with youthful specimens in the fine arts of sculpture and printing". Another fact of interest is that, generally speaking, women teachers were found more satisfactory than men—perhaps, I fear, because they came much cheaper.

These were the dark days of the Town's schools. The Prudential Committees were often not well chosen, and they in turn failed in some cases to hire competent teachers. There was divided authority and no effective co-ordination. It is interesting to note, however, that Milton never let its schools get entirely out of hand, the appropriations of money to be spent by the Prudential Committees were voted by the Town, and not, as in many other places, raised by a tax assessed by the School District itself. This meant that it was not too difficult for the Town to reassume control over the entire school operation, and by 1848 conditions had become such that the Prudential Committees were abolished, and management of the schools was turned over to the School Committee, in whose hands it has ever since remained.

In the 1840's Massachusetts education was entering a new era which was introduced, led, and directed by Horace Mann. This great educator became the first Secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Education, and in 1837 issued his first report on the general conditions in Massachusetts schools. By 1840 he was preaching the iniquities of the district school system—a subject he took up again in his 1846 report. He was responsible for the establishment of the first normal schools¹¹ and thus for the first qualified professional

11. John G. Carter had promoted the establishment of such schools at a somewhat earlier date, but without success.

History of Milton

teachers. The times were ripe for a complete readjustment of the Milton school system, which for almost two generations had remained static, or perhaps even gone backwards. It was due to the educational work of Horace Mann that the School Committee was able to persuade the Town to give them complete control of the schools.

In the fall of 1846 the old North School on Hutchinson's Field was burned by a pupil who thought vacation should be longer, and a hall in the Village was hired as a temporary measure. John M. Forbes gave the Town land for a new school, and laid out School Street (then called Glover Street) on which a new two-story building was erected. This was reported to be "very commodious" even though the upper story was not finished, and in 1849 it was referred to as a model schoolhouse.

At this period we first hear mention of a high school, and an arrangement was made with the Academy—then in one of its several periods of near collapse—to take Town high school pupils, but Town Meeting later changed its mind and the deal fell through.

Now that the School Committee had control, things were really starting to happen. The Centre School House, on Canton Avenue just north of Wendell Park, was repaired and improved (1847), and wells with pumps were built at the North (School Street), East (near Squantum Street), and West (Blue Hill Avenue at Atherton Street) Schools. In 1851 a new East School was voted, and consideration was given to a separate school for New State.¹² The East School is one of the oldest of which we have a photograph. It was fifty by thirty-five feet, and two stories with rooms for primary, intermediate and grammar¹³ classes. The following year major repairs were made on the West School, a new thirty-eight by thirty foot two-story building was erected at Scott's Woods¹⁴ and a single story building was put up on Pleasant

12. The area around Pleasant Street, Gunhill Street and today's Randolph Avenue achieved this name shortly after the Revolution because a number of its inhabitants had gained the reputation of being a crowd of lazy loafers. Daniel Vose's chief clerk, irate when some of them were hanging around the store, vehemently declared that they were not fit to be part of Massachusetts, but should form a new state of their own with Moses Belcher as governor. The name stuck to the area, and Belcher was always thereafter known as the "Governor".

13. By this date, used in the modern meaning.

14. At this date spelled thus rather than the previous "Scotch". The new site was a little farther

The Schools

Street to provide elementary schooling for the children of the New Staters.

As the result of the activities of these six years the school system of the Town had been thoroughly renovated physically and, knowing the feeling of the School Committees of this period, we may feel assured that there had also been a housecleaning of incompetent teachers, and that the pupils no longer "lounged in one after another" after school had started. Whether the reading, writing, and arithmetic were still taught to the tune of the hickory stick I cannot say for sure, but suspect that they were. Progressive education and self-expression were still many years ahead. School now kept for about forty-four weeks in the year, so there was a fairly reasonable amount of vacation allowed both pupils and teachers.

I now propose to take leave of further discussion of the elementary schools. They had at last become the Town's schools again, had been thoroughly modernized for their times, and were to continue much as they were for many years to come. Later history may be studied, by those interested, in the printed reports of the School Committee. By this time the schools were no longer the sole property of the Town, but were really a unit, although a very independent one, in the State school system. Horace Mann had done his great work, and education was established in essentially its modern form.

Milton Academy had lived a hand-to-mouth existence throughout its early days, and could offer its master little beyond the use of a house and what tuition fees were received from the pupils. On five occasions it was forced to suspend for periods up to a year or more, and the turnover of masters had been very considerable. By mid-century the public high school¹⁵ was coming in, and pressure for one was gradually building up here. By the end of the Civil War, Milton was the only Massachusetts town of its relative wealth that did not have a public high school. Finally in 1866 the Town decided to establish one, and succeeded in securing the services of the Academy principal, Sereno D. Hunt. This was the final blow to the Academy, which then

south along Hillside Street beyond Forrest Street, whereas the old school was opposite the end of Harland Street.

15. Boston's English High, 1821, was the first free high school in the world. In 1840 there were only eighteen high schools in the State, but the number grew to 102 by the start of the Civil War.

History of Milton

threw up the sponge and rented its two buildings to the Town. At first Mr. Hunt may well have regretted his choice for he alone had to teach some forty pupils in at least five subjects, but in 1868 he was given an assistant, and probably was a much happier man.

Milton now had a complete school system, with six¹⁶ schoolhouses distributed across the town, containing both elementary and grammar schools, and a high school. These schools were operated by their respective principals under the general control of the School Committee, who made periodic visits and inspections. The Committee was not, however, composed of trained educators. As the schools grew, education broadened, and newer methods developed, it became increasingly obvious that more competent supervision was needed than could be given by the serious and hard-working School Committees, who were unfortunately mere amateurs in what had become a real profession. In 1862 a superintendent of schools was first proposed, but the idea got nowhere, and it was not until 1879 that the Town tried the experiment for a year and then dropped it. A year later a part-time superintendent was hired in conjunction with Canton, and at a somewhat later period in partnership with Quincy. Finally in 1891 the Town employed its own superintendent, and the school system had developed into its final form, from which no really material change has since been made. It is interesting to note that during the 1880's the Town furnished transportation to and from school for some of the pupils. Horse-drawn barges were used, something like small horse-drawn trolley cars with the entrance in the rear and bench seats along the two sides. The use of such barges lasted down until about the time of the First World War.

By 1892 there was a very complete body of Massachusetts laws regulating education. They were detailed and specific, and it is obvious that by this period effective State control—at least on a minimum requirement basis—had been established. These laws made attendance compulsory, provided high school education for those who wished it, specified the subjects to be taught, made permissible the conveyance of pupils to and from school, and

16. The Fairmount School, a seventh, on the far side of Brush Hill, was built in 1857, but was taken over by Hyde Park in 1868, when 400 acres were ceded by Milton to that new town.



CHILDREN AT THE CENTER SCHOOL, 1885



The Schools

established standards of sanitation for schoolhouses. The State, moreover, employed a staff of agents to visit and to report on the manner in which the various cities and towns met the requirements of the laws. Since that time there has been no very material change; new subjects, new methods, and new equipment have been added from time to time, but the basic concept of a town-elected School Committee operating the entire school system in accordance with State requirements, and primarily through the agency of a superintendent selected by them, has not been altered.

The financial relationship between the Town and its schools has changed over the years to a considerable degree. In the earliest days the Selectmen operated the schools as they saw fit, and charged the cost to the general tax levy. Town records show no vote limiting or authorizing a specific expenditure. For instance, as late as 1770 the Town voted that the Selectmen should have discretion as to how the schools should be kept. The year 1785 shows the first money vote for total operating costs, £81.5s. 10d. and five years later three school districts were established with £90 to be apportioned among them. From 1796 on, a definite sum was always specified, but it must be remembered that this was spent by the various district committees who might, if they so wished, add further sums to it, either by donation or, after 1800, by a school district tax. I doubt, however, if this last was ever done in Milton, except perhaps for building purposes. When the district schools were returned to the Town in 1846, and their control given to the School Committee, Town Meeting appropriated the total school budget which was then expended solely by the School Committee. The Committee was limited by the appropriation and could not exceed it. In 1892 the Massachusetts law read that "the . . . towns shall . . . raise such sums of money . . . as they judge necessary". Today through a process of gradual evolution, assisted or perhaps made possible by various court rulings, the School Committee has achieved a very considerable degree of independence from the Town. While Milton has fortunately never had need to make a test of the matter, the School Committee has an appeal from the vote of Town Meeting to the Courts, and if it can convince the Courts of the reasonableness of its budget, the Town is forced to meet it as well as to pay certain penalties. This does

History of Milton

not apply to erection of buildings or to incurring bonded debt. The School Committee thus enjoys a position in the Town government quite unlike that of any other board, and—in theory at least—the only real control the Town has over its schools lies in the intelligent selection of this powerful committee.

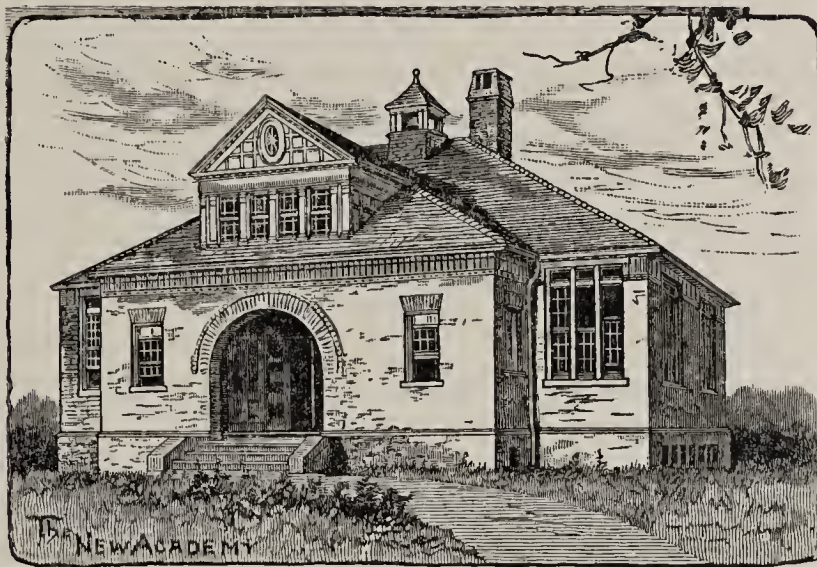
A very brief summary will now be made of the various physical changes that have taken place since the Civil War period. In 1859 the Centre School which stood on Canton Avenue near Wendell Park on land initially rented from the Unitarian Church was rebuilt. Its use was discontinued in 1890 when the Thacher School, now used for offices by the Town Engineer and the Water Department, was built in its place. In 1898 the old school building furnished a Fourth of July conflagration which I suspect was assisted in getting started. In 1870 the "Old Brick" on Blue Hill Avenue at Atherton Street was replaced by a wooden building, and seven years later the first school was built to handle the growing load at Mattapan.¹⁷ The Pleasant Street School was replaced in 1879 by the Wadsworth School at Gun Hill and Pleasant Streets. The old Academy building was finally torn down in 1885 and a new home for the High School erected on almost the same location the following year. This building was added to quite extensively ten years later. A new Glover School on School Street was built in 1888; the old building is now the house at 147 Canton Avenue. The year 1894 saw the East School which stood near St. Agatha's rectory replaced by the Belcher School, the oldest public school building still in use in the Town.

No material change then took place until 1910, when part of the present High School building was opened as the Vose School. A gymnasium and locker rooms were added in 1917 and the High School moved in, while the Vose School shifted to the building that the former had just vacated. Shortly after the First World War, the Junior High school system was adopted, and in 1922 the Houghton (Scott's Woods) and Sumner (Blue Hill Avenue) Schools were closed. The following year saw a new Tucker School at Mattapan, and two years later a third addition was made to the High School. In 1929 the Colicott School was built on Pleasant Street on land given to the

17. The 1857 map shows a schoolhouse on Brook Road a little west of St. Mary's Church. This was a small private school taught by Elizabeth R. Swift for a few years after 1850.

The Schools

Town by the Mary A. Cunningham Trustees, and the Wadsworth School was discontinued.





The Church

IT is almost impossible for us today to appreciate the position of the New England Church in the life of the early days. Both the Puritans and their religion have been subject to so much distortion, imagination, and just plain falsification that it is very difficult to sweep away the many misconceptions that have become prevalent. Let us start with the basic precept that, regardless of all else, the Puritans were human men and women, subject to human ideals and human frailties. Also I am convinced that, despite the passage of many years, human nature has not really changed. The Puritans most certainly did not go around dressed solely in drab clothes and with long faces. They were normal healthy people who enjoyed the good things of life, but who also had enough self control, at least in most cases, not to overindulge in them. The old records tell us that they wore bright colorful clothes,¹ although not of course when at work in the fields or the kitchen, that the women often devoted too much attention to their dress, that the men sometimes drank too much, and that families vied for the best pews in the church—one of the few outward marks of standing in a day when there were no motor cars and summer places with which to confound one's neighbors. In short, think of them as not really very different from most people living today, with one single exception, the place of religion in their lives.

In the early 1600's it was normal to consider the Church and the State as

1. Governor Bradford at his death in 1657 left a red waistcoat and a violet cloak (Miller & Johnson, *The Puritans*, N. Y., 1938, p. 91). In 1682 in Boston we find reference to a satin coat with gold flowers, blue breeches, gold and silver buttons, and a scarlet petticoat with silver lace (Weeden, *Soc. & Ec. Hist. of N. E.*, Boston, 1890, pp. 286-287).

History of Milton

one. It might be the Roman Catholic Church as in Spain, the Anglican as in England, or the Calvinist as in Switzerland, but generally speaking it was normal for each state to have its single religion. There of course were exceptions, as in France, where the Edict of Nantes, later to be revoked, granted material liberties to the Protestants. In England the Puritans were followers of the state religion who did not dissent from it, but believed that it should be purified and reformed.² This could not be done in England, and this fact was the principal driving force that caused the Puritan exodus to New England. The people who made this migration to a very large extent were homogeneous in their religious belief—that of a somewhat modified Church of England, free from the control of any Bishops, and simplified in its service and ritual. Accustomed as they had been at home to the thought of a state religion, it was but natural that they were intolerant of any religion other than the one for the sake of which they had left Old England. They had quitted a place where they could not worship as they chose, and came to New England where they could. What was more natural than that they should wish their belief to be the only one practiced? Religious tolerance was not practiced in the 1600's either in the Old World or in the New.³

Membership in the Church naturally became a prerequisite for the franchise, and this worked no hardship because the majority of the men making the migration, barring certain bound men and servants, were, or shortly became, members of one of the congregations.

The Dorchester Church was the second established in New England,⁴ and it was almost unique in that it was organized in the Old Country, coming over as an established congregation. The Church members settled the Dorchester area, and it was but natural that the result was a Town and a Church which were practically one. The Church had its ministers, elders

2. The Pilgrims of Plymouth, however, were dissenters from the Church of England. Later, as the New England Congregational churches grew, the distinction disappeared and Plymouth merged into the usual New England type of church.

3. "Let men of God in courts and churches watch
O'er such as do a toleration hatch, . . ."

Part of poem found in pocket of Gov. Thomas Dudley upon his death in 1653 (quoted in Mather's *Magnalia*).

4. It was the third if we include the dissenting church of Plymouth.

The Church

and deacons, while the Town had its civil officers; yet we find the Church concerning itself with some matters of secular life, while leaving to the civil authorities certain duties such as marriages and funerals that we now think of as religious functions. We must really think of the Town and the Church as practically the same entity in the very early days of the settlement. By the middle of the seventeenth century many of the first American-born generation and of the later immigrants showed less interest in the Church, and the rift between Church and State began to appear. All were required to attend service, but not all were admitted to full communion with the Church. Thus we find the start of what later became the two subdivisions of the congregation—the Church, or corporate body of fully qualified members, and the Parish, or the body of all those who attended church services. In the earliest days Church and Parish were essentially the same, while by 1800 we find that the Milton Church consisted of less than three dozen members as opposed to several hundred in the Parish. As long as most of the population of a settlement were members of the Church it was entirely logical that Church and State should be thought of as one, and that the Church should regulate some matters which we now think of as purely secular. On the other hand, the official concern of the Church—at least insofar as it is recorded in the Dorchester Church records—appears generally to have been limited to attempts to enforce the Ten Commandments, particularly the Seventh, and to discourage excessive drinking. Most of the early Milton records have been lost or exist only in very abbreviated form, so we can learn little from them, but the Dorchester records are quite complete.

It is impossible for us today to appreciate the position of the Church in the lives of the early settlers, or for that matter in those of all Christians throughout the world. It is inconceivable to us today to think of resorting to armed force in order to impose our religious belief upon others, yet by 1600 Europe was only emerging from a long period of wars that were essentially religious in nature. The Englishmen of 1630, and most particularly that group which formed the backbone of the Puritan migration, were greatly concerned with religion from their earliest youth. In those days there was but little secular literature, and to a large extent religion offered the only

History of Milton

opportunity for intellectual activity. Art and the theater were not approved of by the Puritans, and little outlet remained for the mind but religion.⁵ It is most difficult for us today to grasp the fine points of doctrine, such as the Covenant of Grace as opposed to that of Works, which was a source of much controversy, or the Antinomian heresy of Anne Hutchinson,⁶ but it was such matters as these that gave vent to the otherwise intellectual vacuum of those days. To read one of the early sermons is for us today a task of considerable difficulty and little enjoyment, yet our ancestors sat through hours of this every Sunday, and must have liked it or the practice would not have been so long continued. I think that we can secure our best appreciation of the position of religion in early New England if we think of it not only as the religion, but also as the radio, the television, the magazine, the novel and the theater of that day. Then, if we think of church attendance in a country town like Milton as also—before, after and between the services—the Woman's Club, the Rotary, the bridge party, and the gossip at the supermarket, we can begin to grasp the place of religion in the life of our ancestors.

The Meeting House was never called a church. The Church was comprised of a select portion of that group which worshipped in the Meeting House. Church membership was not easy to come by—one must first convince those already admitted that one was fit for admission to their group, not always an easy thing, and then one must stand up before the entire congregation and publicly state just how and when one had seen the light.⁷

5. "Visitors to New England in the Puritan period testified to hearing technical religious discussion among farmers and hired hands sitting around the fireplace in the evening" (Miller & Johnson, *The Puritans*, p. 14).

Milton's Peter Thacher was minister at Barnstable on a trial basis for some months before he came to Milton. While there, a layman in the congregation accused him of preaching false doctrine.

6. Mistress Hutchinson, a well-to-do and highly intelligent lady, cannot here be given the attention that she deserves. She instigated a religious controversy which threatened serious political consequences, and at a time when relations with the mother country were very touchy. After what was probably the most famous early New England trial she was banished from the Colony, and eventually killed by Indians near Westchester, New York, where the Hutchinson River Parkway commemorates her name. She was an ancestor of Governor Thomas Hutchinson and of mine. William, her husband, originally owned much of East Milton as far west as Gulliver's Brook.

7. A Negro slave could be and fairly often was admitted to this inner body and yet his owner might be refused membership.

The Church

Women were often allowed to read their "relation",⁸ as the statement was called, but men were supposed to present their case verbally. I find a note in the Dorchester Church Records that some young men would like to join the Church if only their "relations" could be read. This requirement was evidently eased or waived in later years. In November 1797 the Milton Church voted "that in future this Church will not insist on a relation from those who desire admission into full communion." By the time of the Revolution it appears that the great majority of the Milton congregation, as in most other towns, was not in full communion with the Church, and that no particular distinction was drawn between the two classes. Members of the Church were a close inner group that had certain voting and managerial privileges. Probably, at least as time went on, they were thought of more as a vestry committee than as the chosen body of Christ's saints that they were originally supposed to be.

A misguided Historical Society a number of years ago marked the site of Milton's first Meeting House with a bronze plaque showing a log structure. I know of no justification whatsoever for assuming this type of construction, and there is much evidence to the contrary. We have definite proof that the Pilgrims built their first meeting house of sawed boards, and it has been shown that log construction was introduced into this country by the Swedes and did not reach New England until after the coastal areas had been settled.⁹ Some early garrison houses built for defensive purposes were made of carefully squared and fitted timbers with flush corners, but this was expensive construction used to stop bullets.

The Meeting House was not in any way considered sacred. It was a build-

8. Examples of "relations" of the mid-1600's are given in the last part of the diary of Michael Wigglesworth, published by the Colonial Society of Massachusetts in Vol. xxxv, 1942-46. Incidentally this diary shows Wigglesworth, hitherto usually known for his "Day of Doom", to have been about everything that today's debunkers and Puritan haters claim a clergyman of that day to have been. Fortunately he was not at all typical.

9. Dedham's first meeting house, built in 1637, was of frame construction, thirty-six by twenty feet in size, with a thatched roof. That of Sudbury built in 1642 under conditions which were ruder than existed in Milton, is known to have been of frame construction. If the reader is still inclined to believe that the log cabin was used in early New England, he should read that excellent book *The Log Cabin Myth*, by Harold R. Shurtleff (edited by Samuel E. Morison), Cambridge, 1939.

History of Milton

ing used for religious, civic, and social purposes. The Sunday service would normally start at about nine o'clock and finish by noon or thereabouts.¹⁰ There would be a very lengthy prayer, a sermon of at least an hour in length, and singing of psalms, but there would be no music whatsoever.¹¹ Puritan music and church singing are two most interesting subjects, each of which deserves a book by itself. By 1700 the singing had fallen into a most degenerate state. A deacon would read a line, then all would sing it, each following his own idea of tune, then the deacon would read another line, and the process would be repeated. This was called "lining out the hymn". Milton's Peter Thacher was one of the leaders in the movement to reform church singing and to make it again harmonious. I have found a record of the following amusing lines, written on the back of a church pew at an unknown date, but evidently at the time when the reform movement in church music was causing wide dissensions in many a congregation.

"Could poor King David but for once
To S[alem] Church repair,
And hear his psalms thus warbled out,
Good Lord, how he would swear."

It has been said that in some New England towns people built small "noon houses" near the Meeting House. These would have a fireplace and might be used jointly by several families in the interval between services. There is record of the sale in 1730 of a twenty-foot-square lot just across the road from the Milton Meeting House to a group of eight men, some of whom lived on Brush Hill and near Houghton's Pond. They put up a building of some sort, very probably for just this purpose.

Sunday observance was not then carried to some of the extremes that later existed. The common sense rule said that you should not do anything of a secular nature between sunset Saturday and the same time on Sunday, except those things that could not be put off. Obviously the animals had to

10. "I was near a hour & halfe in my first prayer . . . & an hour in sermon. . . . sweet much soe yt my shirt was wet to my back" (Rev. Peter Thacher's diary, 11 January 1679). "I stood about three houres in prayer & preaching . . ." (*Ibid.*, 27 April 1679).

11. By 1779 Milton appears to have had an organized church choir, but as late as 1846 the new Congregational Church depended upon a bass viol and a seraphine, which was a crude form of harmonium without resonators, rather harsh in tone.

The Church

be fed and watered, the cows milked, and some food prepared. Obviously one did not bake bread, wash clothes or patch the barn roof. This custom died hard in New England. When I was a boy here, one did not play baseball on Sunday afternoon anywhere that a policeman might see you, and in the boyhood of my uncles you either took a walk or remained out of sight indoors where you were supposed, at least in strict households, to sit still and read a good religious book.

No Sabbath travel except for the purposes of church attendance, of necessity, or of mercy, was allowed. Practically speaking, this forbade all travel on main roads between towns, and we find constant mention in diaries and journals, even as late as the early Federalist period, of people being stopped, asked where they were going, and often prevented from continuing their journey.

Church attendance was required of all, but this obviously was never entirely secured. In Boston, where one attended the church of one's choice, there would necessarily be many who could manage to avoid going, should they so desire, but in a town like Milton with a single church it would be very simple to maintain a check. As late as 1791, Massachusetts law provided a fine for failure to attend, but there is no evidence that attempts were ever made to enforce it.

The early meeting houses were unheated, although people might and did bring hot bricks and charcoal foot stoves with them. I also have a suspicion that a large and woolly dog was rather a desirable possession in winter. Sewall in his diary speaks of a dog in a Boston Meeting House as if they were quite usual. (His particular dog misbehaved.) In March of 1755 our Town Meeting decreed that if a dog were allowed to come into the Meeting House more than once on the Sabbath the owner must pay a shilling or forfeit the dog. Apparently if the dog came in and remained quiet all was well, but four years later the Town changed its mind and applied the same penalty to the dog's initial appearance. As late as April 1810 Town Meeting voted against installing a stove in the Meeting House. Our ancestors obviously were pretty rugged individuals, or else awfully "sot" in their ways.

Milton originally was part of Dorchester, and the early settlers here were

History of Milton

of course members of the Dorchester Church. The first Meeting House was in the immediate vicinity of Edward Everett Square, but in 1670 it was moved farther south to Meeting House Hill. The first location was about $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles from the falls of the Neponset at what became Milton Village, and, since the earliest settlement of Milton was in an area within about a half mile of this point, it was not too far to go on Sundays when there was little activity other than church attendance. I have found a somewhat later record of five miles as being the greatest distance that a churchgoer should be expected to travel.

Thus we find the early settlers of Milton as regular members of the Dorchester Church throughout the first years of the settlement. As the farms increased and spread out farther to the south and west the trip to church became more of a hardship, and at some undetermined time, but perhaps about 1656, a Meeting House was built at Churchill's Lane and Adams Street, and services were held there. This was an irregular and perhaps illegal procedure, for the settlers of Milton were members of the Dorchester Church, and as such were required to pay their tax toward supporting Mr. Mather, the Dorchester minister. Perhaps they did, as well as raising funds for the local services, but neither the Town nor the Church records of Dorchester make any reference to the matter whatever, other than a Town vote in 1657 that "... our brethren ... at Unquity ... in regard they had a minister ther ... are exempted from payinge unto Mr. Mather for this yeare if they desire it." Again in 1661 Unquity was exempted from the ministerial rate, as the tax was then called. From this same record we learn that our Meeting House was at Adams Street and Churchill's Lane in September 1660.

The Braintree Church was "gathered", as the old saying went, in September of 1639, with Mr. Thompson as minister, Mr. Flynt as teaching elder, or assistant pastor, and Stephen Kinsley as ruling elder. In those days a ruling elder was a layman who exercised authority within the Church in certain matters of discipline and who could preach and generally act as a minister in all ways except that of administering the sacrament. Dr. Teele says that Elder Kinsley instituted religious services at Unquity at an early date. He was in Braintree as early as 1638, living just east of the present

The Church

town line at East Milton. At some time after 1653, probably 1656, he moved to Milton, and lived on Adams Street just north of Algerine Corner. Presumably it was after he took up residence here that local services were started with the Elder officiating, perhaps at times being replaced by some minister from outside. Throughout this period the inhabitants of Milton were still legally a part of the Dorchester parish, and it is certain that some continued to attend services at the Meeting House near Edward Everett Square.

In 1662 Milton was set off from Dorchester and became a separate town, yet we find the extraordinary situation of the Milton inhabitants failing to establish a new Church and remaining members of the Dorchester Church. In 1668 the Dorchester Church called a meeting to hear and judge a quarrel between three Milton residents, and eight years later we read of certain Milton children assenting to the covenant of that Church.

The first minister in Milton was Samuel Torrey, who had gone to Harvard, but left in a huff along with several of his classmates when the college course was extended from three to four years.¹² He was in Milton in 1663 and 1664, going to Weymouth in December of the latter year, and remaining there as minister until his death some 50 years later. Mr. Torrey was followed for a short time, probably from about 1666 until 1669, by Joseph Emerson. The Town records show that Milton had twinges of conscience as to whether they had done the fair thing by Mr. Emerson when they dismissed him. There was a gap of about a year without a minister, and then in 1670 Thomas Mighill, Harvard 1663, came to Milton for a trial run, as it were. With a short absence, due perhaps to the exigencies of King Philip's War of 1675, he remained for almost eight years, at £60 per year.

In 1664 the Town bought land for a "ministerial house" from Robert Vose, and the house was built shortly thereafter. It stood a little north of Brook Road, about halfway between Churchill's Lane, the only road there at that time, and Randolph Avenue, probably quite near the present house at 216 Randolph Avenue. The old Meeting House on Adams Street was re-

12. It must have been a source of great satisfaction to him to have been elected President of Harvard in 1682. Our Rev. Peter Thacher, who was a member of the Harvard Corporation, carried the news to him in Weymouth, but he refused the office.

History of Milton

paired in the fall of 1670 and its roof rethatched for use that winter, but a new building was started near what was later to be the head of Vose's Lane on Centre Street, and was finished the following year. It remained in use until 1728. Dr. Teele believed that it was a small, almost square building with a gallery on one side, but we know nothing definite, beyond the fact that it was clapboarded, and that in 1728 it had a small bell.

Let us pause now for a moment and consider just what the early Milton Church was. One of the great objections of the Puritans to the Anglican Church was the control by the bishops, and the result was that the New England congregations had no formal higher organization. Each church was a separate entity, owing its allegiance direct to Christ alone, and subject to no control but its own. Naturally this theory was not wholly workable and a loose control soon evolved. Practically speaking, all the ministers, except those that came over from England, were graduates of Harvard and had been taught the same beliefs. On rare occasions and for some special purpose a synod of ministers and leading laymen from each church assembled in convention, and determined policy and procedure, but these general assemblies were rarely used. If a local church had some problem to settle and felt the need of outside help, the members would invite small delegations from perhaps five or six other churches to join in council to help decide the problem. Conversely, if it was felt that a church was going astray, a self-appointed council of neighboring churches might assemble and attempt to return the wayward sister to the path that they felt she should follow. Thus there was a loose but reasonably effective control over what was theoretically a group of completely independent congregations, and this control was sufficiently effective to allow the Unitarian movement of the early 1800's to proceed decently and according to rule.

There were also informal regional associations of ministers who met together periodically for prayer, consultation, and, I trust, a little social relaxation. In 1680 Braintree, Bridgewater, Cambridge, Dedham, Dorchester, Hull, Medfield, Milton and Weymouth constituted one group. The ministers usually met every two months, rotating among the various parsonages.

In the 1600's Harvard did not graduate a minister; it merely produced a

The Church

man suitable to be one, and he became one only when ordained by a congregation. Initially a church undertook to select and ordain their minister solely by their own action, but before long it became customary to invite delegations from a number of other churches to assist in the ceremony of ordination. They were merely witnesses and assistants; the power was solely in the hands of the local congregation. Once the candidate had been ordained, he became a minister, but only for so long as he continued to guide and minister to that church. If he should leave, he—technically at least—again became a layman until such time as another congregation might call and ordain him. Generally in the early days the minister was selected and ordained as a young man, and remained minister of that church for the rest of his active life.

A congregation was "gathered" by a group joining together and signing a covenant. There is no connection here with the covenant of the Scottish reformists; that of the New England churches was simply an agreement to worship together and to abide by certain simple rules. The congregation then selected and ordained a minister, thus becoming a fully established church. It was normal for the church to be gathered at the same time that the town was incorporated, but sometimes, on account of distance or lack of roads, a second church might be organized in the same town.¹³ In Milton, however, we find the most unusual case of a town coming into being and yet having no legally constituted church. Milton was set off from Dorchester in 1662, had its own Meeting House and hired various ministers from at least 1663, yet there was apparently no legally constituted church organization provided for many years to come.

Samuel Mann, who had been driven from his Wrentham parish by King Philip's War, served Milton for some two years until 1680. It was during his incumbency that the first Milton Church of which we have record was organized, yet he apparently was not ordained by it. There may well have been an earlier Church, although if so it was never recognized by the parent Church in Dorchester. In May 1678, "ther was a church gathered by some

13. Barnstable, for instance, where a second parish was established in 1717, seventy-eight years after the first settlement.

History of Milton

of our breatheren yt¹⁴ live at Milton it was done in or meeting hous at dorchester because of some opposission yt did appear . . .”

Here is a hint of some dissension and the existence of a possible rival group or congregation. Several of the signers of the Milton covenant were newcomers who had only recently joined the Dorchester Church, and there may well have been a lack of harmony between them and the older settlers. Our State Archives contain a petition of a number of prominent inhabitants of the Town in favor of retaining Mr. Mighill. Whatever may have been the disagreement or rivalry, the establishment of the new congregation cleared the air, and the Church of Christ in Milton started on a career which was to be remarkably serene and free from trouble until the Unitarian schism finally arrived. Even then the division of the congregation took place under much less unhappy conditions than existed in most other of the Bay towns.

Much trash has been written about the rigid theocratic control which supposedly was exercised over the New England town of two hundred or more years ago. Of course the minister had great weight, as was only fitting, since he was retained to guide the moral and spiritual affairs of the community, but this did not stem merely from the fact that he was a minister. It was practically mandatory that he should be a college graduate, an educated gentleman, often the only one in the community. As such he naturally was looked up to by most of those who had lesser education. Moreover, he was a leader, trained by Harvard or Yale for that purpose. Then finally he was in almost all cases a high-minded man with no ulterior motives, who had chosen to serve the community, presumably for the rest of his natural life. Is it any wonder that he exercised great power? It was exercised, however, by the will of the inhabitants and by the minister's personality and leadership, and not by some external theocratic force.

Normally a young aspirant who had just graduated from Harvard or Yale, or who had filled in some time since graduation by teaching school, was invited to preach for a short trial period. If the congregation approved of him,

14. The use of y in yt, ye, etc., is simply as an abbreviation for “th”. Ye was always pronounced “the”.

The Church

and this was quite apt to be by unanimous vote, a delegation was appointed to treat with him on the matter of salary and other considerations. It became usual to "settle" a lump sum upon the minister in order to enable him to move, and sometimes to acquire a house. Milton possessed a "ministerial" house, or parsonage, which was furnished in addition to the salary, but we find Peter Thacher eventually preferring to leave this and build a house of his own. Once the salary and settlement were arranged, invitations would be sent to the congregations of various, but not necessarily neighboring, towns to send delegations to the ordination of the new and presumably permanent minister.

A non-settled and thus temporary minister might after trial move on to some other church or churches until he at last found a suitable place, but if he did not find it while still fairly young, he probably fell back on school-teaching for his livelihood. In some cases older ministers gave up a settled pulpit and moved on, perhaps to a famous Boston church, as did Jeremy Belknap, who had started as a Milton schoolteacher, was minister in Dover, New Hampshire, for many years, and then moved to the Federal Street Church in Boston. Usually, however, a minister once settled expected to remain.

Various attempts were made to settle Mr. Mighill, and the desire was evident on both sides, yet it came to naught. Rev. Peter Thacher, Harvard 1671, thus secured the honor of becoming the first settled minister of the Milton Church. His father was Thomas Thacher, pastor of the Boston church later known as the "Old South". After taking his A.M. at college in 1674, he traveled and studied abroad, and then preached at Barnstable for about a year before being invited to Milton. He arrived here in 1680, and after a nine-month trial period was ordained, Mr. Mather of the Dorchester Church and Mr. Torrey, who had once held the Milton pulpit, being among the clergymen assisting.

In 1681 he administered the sacrament for the first time that the ceremony ever took place in Milton. This is further evidence of the previously irregular procedure of the Church in Milton. It may well mean that none of the preceding ministers had ever been formally ordained (as they could not

History of Milton

have been in the absence of an organized Church) and they really acted only as ruling elders, as had the layman Stephen Kinsley.

Peter Thacher is the first minister about whom we really know something other than names and dates. He left a journal,¹⁵ for one thing, and was so well known outside of the town that many references to him exist. He was to become one of the leading ministers of the Bay area. His diary shows him to have been mortal, he apparently liked to go hunting, went on an expedition with his wife after strawberries (and was violently ill that evening), and picnicked with friends in the Blue Hills. He bowled at ninepins, he beat his Indian slave over the head when she dropped his daughter, he smoked a pipe, and speculated a bit, sending horses to the West Indies for sale, as well as importing merchandise from England. A newspaper notice of his death said that he was of a lively nature, very engaging in ordinary conversation, and easy and pleasant in any company. I also found a statement that he was a practical Christian and not a blind follower of doctrine. Have we not here a pretty fair description of a modern clergyman, and one far removed from the dour puritanical tyrant that is often pictured? As a clergyman he had his official and religious side, but he also was a human being and made no pretense of being anything else. I think that (except perhaps for the length of his sermons) Peter Thacher would have been a success today in any one of the Milton pulpits.

He moved into the Milton rectory in 1680, but left it in 1689 for a new house which he had built on what became known as Thacher's Plain. The site today is covered by 15 and 19 Audubon Road. He served Milton for almost 50 years until his death in 1727. Besides his diary there exists a small record book in which he noted various items concerning the Milton Church. It is our earliest such record, and is mostly a bare list of births, marriages and deaths, but there is one interesting entry which shows that witches may have existed even in Milton, at least in the minds of some.

"Oct. 24, 1718, Mr. George Sumner had his sister Mrs. Elizabeth Sum-

15. See "The Diary of A Colonial Clergyman, Peter Thacher of Milton", Edward P. Hamilton, in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 1955. The original manuscript is now in the possession of the Mass. Hist. Soc. A typewritten copy of the journal is in the Milton Public Library.

Dec. 26. 1716.

Brother Samuel Andros of Dorchester Villa
had Brother Peter Lion before me at my
house (Deacon Swift, Deacon Tucker Junr. Deacon
Tucker Junr. Deacon Wadsworth Lieutenant Vose
being present) after being with prayer we gave
Bro. Andros liberty to declare his offence. Then
we gave Bro. Peter Lion liberty to make his
defence; Then we received y^e Evidence Andros
produced to prove his offence; After a full de-
bate we found Peter Lion legally guilty
& so brought him to make a confession &
Bro. Andros & y^e brethren present Express
satisfaction & so he was forgiven
& then we closed with prayer & praise.

June. 2. 1717. ^m Elizabeth & ^m Sarah Gul-
liver being propounded to y^e Chh & Congre-
gation in Milton as desiring to owne y^e
Covenant & come vnder y^e watch & discipline
of y^e Chh & so have baptisme, y^e Chh voted
y^e Affirmative.

Oct. 24. 1718. ^m George Sumner had his sister
^m Elizabeth Sumner before me for scan-
dalizing his owne mother & misrepresented
her as a witch & I had y^e presence of Deacon
Tucker Junr. & Deacon Tucker Junr. & Dea-
con J. Wadsworth & Lieutenant Vose to be
present & ^m John Boddock & witnesses &
we found ^m Elizabeth Sumner guilt of y^e breach
of the fifth, six, & ninth commandm. & she
confessed her fault & craved forgiveness of
God & of all whome she had offended & ^m G.
Sumner & y^e rest received satisfaction & so
for gave her & I was to signify to y^e Chh
that satisfaction was given & taken.

The Church

ner before me for scandalizing his own mother and presented [?] her for a witch, and I had the presence of Deacon Tucker, Jr. [?] and Deacon Tucker and Deacon J. Wadsworth and Lieut. Vose to be present, and Mr. John Badcock and witnesses and we found Mrs. Elizabeth Sumner guilt of break of the 5th, 6th and 9th commandments and she confessed her faults and craved forgiveness of God and of all whom she had offended and Mr. George Sumner and the rest received satisfaction and so forgave her and I was to signify to the Church that satisfaction was given and taken."

The Milton Historical Society possesses, as the gift of the Bostonian Society, Peter Thacher's silver watch which was passed on to two other Rev. Peters, his son and grandson, then on to Deacon Peter, and finally to Mr. Peter Thacher of Cleveland, who gave it to the Bostonian Society. I recently had the pleasure of cleaning and oiling this watch, and found that it runs today as well as when it was first made in London over 250 years ago.

Peter Thacher died in 1727 in the 77th year of his age, and the 47th of his pastorate. Samuel Sewall, his classmate, came to the funeral, and could not get nearer the Meeting House on Vose's Lane than the burying place on account of the many horses. He would almost certainly have come out Adams Street, and down Churchill's Lane to the burying place, and that means that tethered horses filled the sides of the road all the way along the present Centre Street from the cemetery to Vose's Lane. Evidently Peter Thacher had many friends.

Rev. John Taylor, Harvard 1721, was ordained by the Milton Church in November 1728, and died there 21 years later. We do not know very much about Mr. Taylor, but contemporary writers reported him to have been an agreeable and pleasant companion and friend, modest and somewhat diffident. He appears to have been much loved by his parishioners. It is interesting to note that the salary arrangement made with him provided for a cost-of-living adjustment. He built a house on the site of the present Town Hall, which finally burned down in 1864. His ministry began in the new third Meeting House which was built in 1728. The Town voted that the "Provision" to be served at the raising of the frame of the building should consist of bread, cheese, beer, cider, and rum. The new structure stood near Can-

History of Milton

ton Avenue in front of the present Unitarian Church and was fifty feet by forty feet in size with a 350-pound bell in its belfry.¹⁶

Town meeting of 15 December 1729 provided that the people should be seated in the new Meeting House in accordance with the amount of taxes they paid. There were separate benches for men and women, but families might build pews, provided, however, that they had first paid their share of the meeting house rate. A committee of five was appointed to the ticklish job of assigning the seats and pews. A later report made by this body appears in the Town Records and lists the pew holders by name. Pews had to be built at floor level and could not have a raised inner flooring. There were two galleries, a men's and a women's, with the boys seated on the two back benches on the men's side, where a suitable person was to be provided by the Selectmen to "enspect" them.

In 1751 the two "hindmost" seats in each side gallery were reserved for negro men and women in the "uppermost" gallery. Twenty years later the men who were appointed to take care of the boys in church were directed to keep the boys seated after the blessing was given, until the men had gotten out of their seats. It is not hard to imagine the juvenile stampede which had necessitated this order.

I shall say but a word of the "Great Awakening" of the 1740's which was initiated by Rev. Jonathan Edwards at the Northampton Church, since it in no way affected the placid progress of the Milton congregation. In many another town this religious revival got beyond control and caused churches to split into "Old Lights" and "New Lights". Northampton finally had enough of Jonathan Edwards, who most certainly did not look with favor on the excesses of the "New Lights", and dismissed him from his pulpit, a most unusual action, in 1750. At this time Milton had recently lost Mr. Taylor, and Jonathan Edwards was suggested as a candidate. Town Meeting in September 1750 voted decisively not to consider him. Apparently the Town was

16. For a number of years after 1742 there was great argument as to whether this bell should or should not be rung at 9:00 P.M. One year Town Meeting voted to ring it and another year the vote would be reversed. Some two hundred years later there was an equally hot argument as to whether the chocolate mill's whistle should or should not do its stuff. The cause of silence won, and another bit of old Milton passed into limbo.

The Church

content with the old orthodox way, and had no desire for newfangled revivals. Edwards was relegated to an Indian mission for several years, and then was chosen President of Princeton in 1757, but died shortly after assuming office.

George Whitefield was one of the early revivalists. A graduate of Pembroke College, Oxford, he was originally Anglican, then fell under the influence of Wesley, and finally split with him on some points of doctrine. As a revivalist he preached to all sects with very great success. He first came to this country in 1740 and greatly encouraged the spread of the Great Awakening. He made later trips to America and finally in his last visit in 1770 he preached in Milton. Rev. Mr. Robbins refused him the use of the Meeting House and he spoke from a platform built in front of one of the windows of the old Foye house which stood on the site of the present 320 Adams Street. This is said to have been the largest religious assembly ever held in Milton, but it appears to have had no lasting effect upon the local Church.

At this period and for many years to follow the practice continued of raising the minister's salary by a tax or "rate" assessed against all the property owners of the Town, and the cost of repairs to the Meeting House was also so allocated. The Church had its own finances as well, run by the deacons, who were the business managers. They took charge of the Church's communion silver as well as certain funds which had been donated. At times excess funds were loaned out at interest.¹⁷ The deacons were responsible for providing the bread and wine for the communion service, and for this purpose a special collection was taken each communion Sunday. A record book of the Milton deacons which runs from 1734-1834, lists each collection, as well as the amount spent for wine and "bricks". The collections often did not quite cover the expense, so there usually was a small deficit to worry about. New deacons coming into office would receipt to the old for the communion silver and the Church funds. In the early 1800's the Church contributed toward the support of certain of its impoverished parishioners, but there is no record to show if this custom was one of long standing.

17. The Milton Church's possession and use of such funds was most unusual, and may have been a unique example of a Church with money out on loan.

History of Milton

In 1751 young Mr. Nathaniel Robbins, twenty-four years old and four years out of Harvard, took over the pulpit which he was to hold for forty-four years. For a parsonage he built the "Home Farm", still standing at 730 Canton Avenue. He married a cousin of Governor Hutchinson. No church records remain to tell us of his doings, but he appears to have been much loved by all. His eldest son, Edward Hutchinson Robbins, became a well-known lawyer and was Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts, 1802-07, and then Judge of Probate for Norfolk County. He was most active in establishing Milton Academy. Edward's son, James Murray Robbins, in turn became a prominent citizen of Milton, most influential in all affairs of the Town until his death in 1885. Previous ministers had come and gone, but the Rev. Mr. Robbins left a heritage to the Town. In the closing years of his pastorate, in 1787, the fourth and final Meeting House was built, now the present Unitarian Church, which at first stood at right angles to its present position.

The Town voted to build the Meeting House in October 1785. It was to be paid for out of three sources, of which the most productive was the auctioning off of the pews. This sale realized £1191 for the sixty-two pews on the main floor, and £208 for twenty-four in the gallery. A chance like this to establish one's social standing by bidding in a choice pew over one's competing neighbors did not occur very often, although pews were transferred like any other kind of real estate from time to time, as death or other cause made one available. The old Meeting House was to be sold for what it would bring, and finally any further sum needed was to be put on the tax rate.

For over two years after the death of Nathaniel Robbins there was no regular minister, but in November 1797 the Rev. Joseph McKean was ordained. He had graduated from Harvard, where he founded the Porcellian Club in 1794, and then taught school for three years, at the same time continuing his studies for the ministry. He was only twenty-one when he came to Milton. He was a pronounced Federalist, and appears to have taken more interest in politics than was wise for a clergyman. Moreover, his health was not of the best. A parsonage was built for him on Canton Avenue nearly opposite the present "Home Farm". After a few years in Milton he was forced to take a trip south for his health, and finally left the church in 1804, partly because

The Church

of poor health, but also—and probably to a large extent—because the Town did not treat him well in the matter of pay or in maintenance of the parsonage.

At this particular period national politics were taken very seriously and there were bitter feelings between the Federalists (conservatives) and the Anti-Federalists (Jeffersonian Democrats). Oddly enough in New England it was often at the Meeting House that the two sides came nearest to blows. The Federalists rejoiced in wearing a black cockade on their hats, a round rosette of ribbon some four inches in diameter, while the "Anti-Feds" sported a tricolor rosette. One Sunday afternoon in September 1798, Elisha Gould, probably the eighteen-year-old Milton lad of that name, Joe Phinney, and one by the name of Pitcher strode into Milton's Meeting House flaunting red, white and blue cockades. All was peaceful until the service was over, whereupon the young men were taken in hand by Federalists in the congregation and they finally left the scene in a sad state of disrepair.

Hard feelings between the two political parties were carried into the affairs of everyday life in a way which we can hardly understand today, and people refused to trade in stores owned by one of the opposite party or to patronize their taverns. Milton at this time was predominantly¹⁸ Anti-Federalist in the town as a whole, although the Church was probably largely Federalist. It certainly was most unwise of Mr. McKean to espouse Federalism so vigorously in the face of an Anti-Federalist parish, and this action on his part may well explain the trouble he soon ran into with the parish and his ultimate dismissal from the pulpit.

I have devoted considerable attention to the Milton Church up to this point, because, practically speaking, the Church has been, although to a gradually decreasing extent, a part of the civil town government. Parish and Town were one, and Town Meeting voted in certain, but not all, Church matters. We are now approaching the period of separation between the Town and its Church, and the commencement of complete religious freedom in Massachusetts. Initially there was complete intolerance of any dissenting opinion. Anne Hutchinson was banished because of what we would consid-

18. The 1799 State election produced 83 Jeffersonian to 55 Federalist votes.

History of Milton

er a petty heresy, and Quakers and Anabaptists found hard sledding in the Bay.¹⁹ Only Church members held the right to vote, but all were taxed to support the authorized minister.²⁰ As time went on the proportion of Church members to population decreased, and before the last quarter of the seventeenth century full franchise was granted to non-communicants.²¹ All, of course, members as well as non-members, were supposed to attend meeting twice on Sundays. This may be thought to have been a most unreasonable requirement, but in Virginia the Church of England made a similar church attendance mandatory, and was just as bigoted in its treatment of dissenters.

Gradually but steadily the ratio between Church members and church attendants lessened, until by 1800 the Church in Milton consisted of only about thirty members. It had long been customary in selecting a new minister for the Church to make a choice and then refer it to the Town for concurrence, and this was usually given. In 1796, however, the Church had voted to call the Rev. John Pierce, but the Town did not concur, and he went to the Brookline pulpit, while Joseph McKean became the second choice upon whom both parties agreed. The Massachusetts Constitution of 1780 had given the parish, in this case the Town, the right to select the minister, but the old custom of the Church taking the lead was still followed at this time for some reason unknown to me.

Dr. McKean did one very good deed for the Town. He bought a new record book and copied into it all the scraps of the tattered old Church records that he could find, and then he commenced to make regular entry of all meetings and actions of the Church members. His first entry notes that in September of 1797 the twenty-seven members of the Church present at the

19. Too many of the early Quakers were religious fanatics desirous more of creating disturbances than of practicing their faith in quiet decency. One of their favorite proceedings was for a naked woman, her face painted black, to rush into a Congregational meeting house during services, shouting and ranting. The laws against dissenting sects were more stringent than was their execution, which sometimes was effected only after the victims had repeatedly dared the Colony to punish them.

20. Boston was the exception to the rule, the churches there were on a purely voluntary basis, and one attended and helped support the particular congregation which he favored.

21. After 1647 non-members were allowed to vote in all local matters, and in 1664 the church membership requirement was removed entirely.

The Church

meeting then held chose him as minister and appointed a committee to notify the Town and request its concurrence. One custom of the early New England church was to require public acknowledgement of various sins in front of the whole congregation, and what early Milton records we have contain many such entries. This practice apparently died hard, for we find an interesting vote of the Church in September 1798. A committee reported that it was not expedient in future to make public confessions of breaches of the Seventh Commandment "because hereby the baptism of several children is very probably prevented". Another entry of about the same date states that "it was expedient that —'s children should be baptised in private".

In 1804 the Milton Church called an ecclesiastical council to approve the separation of Dr. McKean, a most solemn and unusual matter. The visiting churches came, met, and approved, and Joseph McKean left for greener fields and happier pastures which eventually led to a professorship at Harvard and an early death. The Town should have felt a little guilty about the way it had treated him. Caught in the toils of inflation and rising living costs he pled with the Town for help, but his cries fell on stony ears. The Church members wished to help him, but Town Meeting held the purse strings.

There was now a vacancy for some two years, probably filled by temporary ministers, but in 1807 Rev. Samuel Gile came from Plaistow, New Hampshire, to become the last minister of the old Church of Christ in Milton. He broke the Harvard tradition, for he graduated at Dartmouth in 1804. For a century and a quarter Milton had enjoyed a peaceful religious atmosphere, and one free from any of the disturbances which had plagued many of the sister churches, but the misery and bitterness of a religious quarrel were about to burst upon the town.

I mentioned earlier the requirement that only Church members could vote, yet all must support and attend the one established Church. In 1638 the General Court decreed that all must share in the support of the minister, and as late as 1692 a similar law was continued. By the latter half of the seventeenth century the original emigrants were fast disappearing and there was a marked decrease in the amount of intolerance being exercised. Not that the new generation as a whole necessarily favored tolerance, but they

History of Milton

feared appeals to England. The loss of the original charter and the various maneuverings to secure the new one all resulted in a general easing of controls. In 1686 Joseph Dudley, the first Royalist governor, introduced the Anglican service to Boston, a dreadful thing to many Bostonians, because this was the religion to avoid which their fathers had left the old country.²² Shortly after this time it became possible for a well-behaved Boston congregation to worship much as it pleased, so long as it was discreet, but the country was more conservative, and the established church maintained its sway in the towns. Our neighbor Braintree, as Quincy then was known, had an Anglican church in the early 1700's.²³

Throughout Massachusetts Bay every town had its independent Congregational Church, each separate and owing allegiance directly to Christ alone. There was of course a loose control through ecclesiastical councils and traditions, but the common training the ministers once got at Harvard was now being changed by the coming of other colleges. Thus it became increasingly possible for a minister to have views of his own and to preach them. This is no place to enter into theological discussions and definitions of dogma, but a brief word is necessary. The concept of the established church was Trinitarian, and all doubts and deviating doctrines had once been fiercely suppressed. There had long been a growing opposition to the strict and conservative orthodoxy of the Congregational Church, and as old traditions and trammels were gradually being sloughed off, this newer and more liberal belief began to gain, somewhat under cover at first, for it was heresy by the old standards.

22. For some unknown reason Milton's Henry Vose, grandson of the first Robert, went to Boston in May 1686 to be married to Elizabeth Badcock by Edmund Randolph's Anglican chaplain, the Rev. Robert Ratcliffe. This was certainly the first Church of England marriage in the Bay Colony, and one of the very first executed by a clergyman. Hitherto only a magistrate had the legal right to perform marriages.

23. There were apparently Church of England communicants in Braintree as early as 1689, and by 1704 Christ Church was formally organized. It never was very large and had no church building until 1727, in which year the Rev. Ebenezer Miller became pastor. The son of Samuel Miller of Milton, he had prepared for Harvard under Peter Thacher, for Milton then had no grammar school, and graduated from Harvard in the class of 1722. The Anglican community in Braintree sent him to England where he received an M.A. at Oxford and was ordained. He then returned to Braintree and was the Anglican minister there for thirty-six years. Oxford awarded him a D.D. in 1747.

The Church

It has been stated that even before the Revolution some of the Boston ministers were, practically speaking, Unitarians and were preaching that doctrine freely in their churches. No great harm was done and no great stir would have been raised because any of the congregation who did not like what was going on was free to leave and join some other Boston church that suited him better. Anywhere else the matter was very different, for there was but one church and nowhere else to go. Thus in the country churches there was no safety valve and the pressure would build up until it burst.

While it was the Anglican King's Chapel that first cut free from the Trinitarian doctrine, it strangely enough was the church of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, the oldest in New England, that was the first of the country churches to come out openly for the new faith.

Just as Puritanism was a reform movement originating within the Church of England, so was Unitarianism a liberal reform movement within the Congregational Church. The appeal of this new doctrine was very great, partly because people were thinking more for themselves, the spirit of change was in the air, and the excesses of the "New Light" revivalists had disgusted many.

In the early 1800's the spark caught and soon the forest fire of Unitarianism was sweeping through Christ's churches of the Bay. Church after church split asunder in angry dissension, accompanied by bickerings and backbitings over who should have the church property. This last was finally decided by the Supreme Court of Massachusetts by judges, who were mostly Unitarians, in a ruling which, generally speaking, favored the new and more liberal faith. The Connecticut River churches had had their troubles earlier when the "New" and the "Old Lights" split, but such troubles were something new to the Bay. The Unitarian movement was narrowly localized over an area covered by an arc of some thirty miles drawn around the State House, and so remained for a long time. Harvard was taken over between 1803 and 1818, the older faith falling back upon Andover Theological Seminary for its stronghold. It has been estimated that about one-quarter of the members of all the congregations where the split took place joined the liberal wing and retained possession of practically all of the property. It is no

History of Milton

wonder that the bitterness engendered was very great, and was felt for many a year to come. Today it is forgotten, but two generations ago my grandfather used to say, "Well, of course there are some nice people among the Unitarians", and I imagine that the Unitarians had their remarks about the old mossbacks who blindly followed a hidebound Calvinism.

The Milton Church had enjoyed many years of placid existence, but change finally caught up with it, although the final break came later than in most towns. The first inkling of trouble appeared in Town Meeting, in December 1814, when a committee noted with deep regret a disposition of Milton citizens to leave the local Church and join the Third Religious Society in Dorchester, a Unitarian offshoot of Dr. Codman's Church. The committee stated that it was "the first breach that has been made upon us since the settlement of the town and the establishment of religious order therein".

In 1659 Dorchester had set apart four hundred acres of land, the income from which was to be used to help maintain the minister. When Milton was set off, the land was divided in half, our Town receiving that portion which lay along and to the north of Canton Avenue, between Thatcher Street and Pine Tree Brook. There are various Town Meeting records referring to the improvement and utilization of this land. In 1818 at the request of the Town the General Court established the Milton Parish as a separate corporation, which assumed all the rights and duties with respect to the maintenance of the minister and the Meeting House that had hitherto belonged to the Town. This meant that the Parish took title to the ministerial lands, but the Act provided that their use must never be diverted from the initial purpose—that of assisting in the support of the minister.²⁴

The first Unitarian Society was formed in September 1826, but after a short time it rejoined the old parish. I can find no other reference to this temporary break, and Dr. Gile's record book makes no mention of it. The February 1829 Town Meeting voted to sue the parish for the return to the Town of the ministerial lands, but no further report of this matter is to be

24. Despite the provision of the Act all of the land apparently was taken over by the Unitarian Church at the break-up, and in the 1830's we find the Town paying rent to the Church for the use of a part of it as a school lot.

The Church

found. Presumably the action of the Supreme Court in the Dedham case quashed the Town's case. The record book of the old Church closes in 1828 and then follow two blank pages. It reopens in 1834 as the record book of the First Congregational Parish (Unitarian) and continues on down into our time. Thus we know little of the details of the change, but everything to be found, both scanty records and traditions, agrees that it took place in Milton with much less bitterness than was usual in other towns. Dr. Morison, long the Unitarian minister, in 1862 preached two bicentennial sermons in one of which he said "there was as little ill feeling as there ever is in such a separation". He also made another interesting statement: "The most remarkable feature in the history of the parish has been the harmony between the ministers and their people." Whereas in most towns the Unitarians were in a minority, on the whole it would appear that if anything, they may have been a majority here in Milton at that time, although the Church itself was almost unanimously Trinitarian. We find one most unusual gesture on the part of the new Unitarian congregation, an offer made in February 1835 to share the Communion silver between the two groups, but the old Church refused to have anything to do with such a thing. Presumably they preferred the cloak of martyrdom (or of Yankee cussedness, which may be much the same after all).²⁵

Dr. Gile and his Trinitarian group built the Meeting House which now stands just north of the Town Hall, and before too many years the two congregations were on friendly, if perhaps cautious, terms. Rev. Benjamin Huntoon had come to fill the Unitarian pulpit in 1834, and married a Milton girl, Lydia Baker, granddaughter of Daniel Vose.

Formal disestablishment took place in 1834 through the adoption of the Eleventh Amendment to the Massachusetts State Constitution, and from this time on there was no connection between Church and State. Each connected himself with the church of his choice and assisted in supporting it.

In 1826 the "Old Stone" Church had been built in East Milton by a Uni-

25. Contrast this with what took place in Dedham when that parish split in two. Someone, presumably of the old congregation, broke into the meeting house one night and carried away the Church silver, which was kept in hiding for over a century. Finally, one morning some thirty years ago, it was found deposited on the doorstep of the Dedham Historical Society.

History of Milton

tarian group, who broke away from the Quincy Unitarian Church, but they did not long occupy it. In 1829 the Second Congregational Parish was organized in East Milton and it met at this meeting house. In 1834 Dr. Gile and his orthodox group worshipped there previous to building their own church at the Center, and it was used at times by various congregations, but fell into disrepair. The latest record that I find of its existence was in 1861, when there was a fire bell in its tower. Not too long after this date it was taken down.

In 1843 a new Congregational parish was formed in East Milton. It first met in the hall over Babcock's store, but by 1846 constructed the building on Adams Street now used for secular purposes. Then known as the Second Evangelical Church, it today is the East Congregational Church.

The Roman Catholic Church came to this vicinity in the person of Father Pendergast, who first said Mass in Quincy in 1826, but it was not until 1841 that a parish was formally established. This was St. Mary's in West Quincy, which then covered all the South Shore towns from the Neponset to Plymouth. The parish was organized in East Milton's "Old Stone" Church where the first services appear to have been held, by Father Terence Fitzsimmons. It initially was a mission of the South Boston parish. The first church building, a simple one of wood, was dedicated in 1842, and two years later the Rev. Patrick O'Beirne became the first resident pastor.

In 1863 St. Gregory's, on the Dorchester side of the Village, was formed, and for many years Milton was within its parish. The Rev. Thomas McNulty was the first pastor. He was succeeded by Father "Fitz", as the Rev. W. H. Fitzpatrick was lovingly known to many Miltonians. St. Agatha's in East Milton was started as a mission of St. Gregory's early in the century. At the time of the First World War a basement chapel was built, and the parish was established in 1922, with Father Eugene A. Carney as pastor.

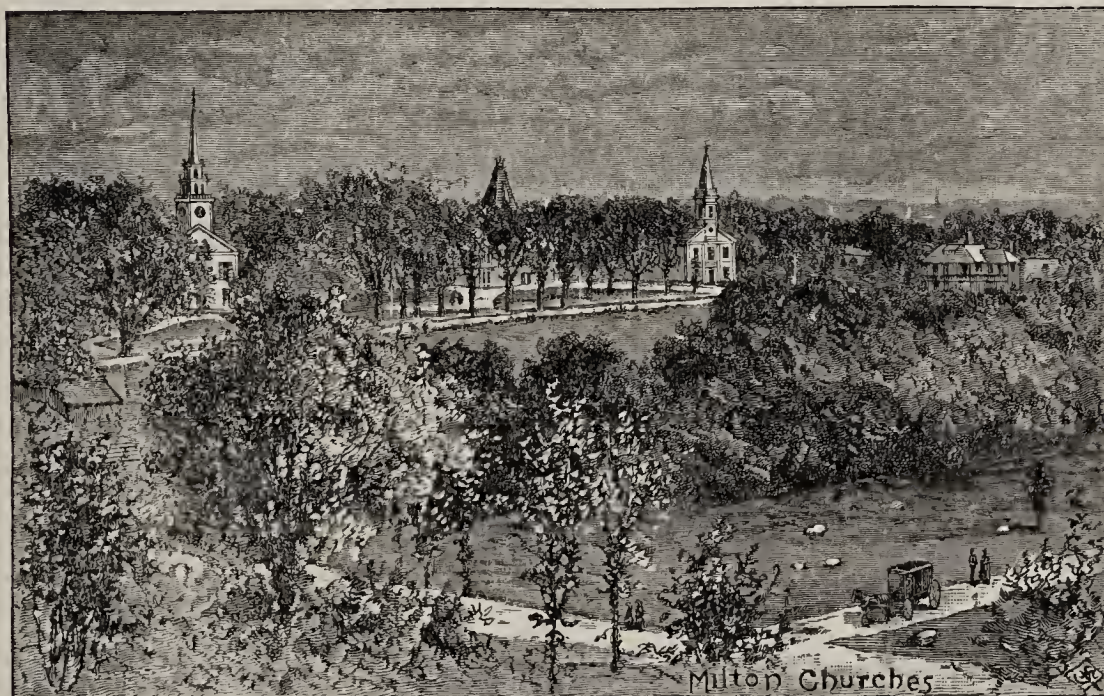
The Baptists first organized as a mission in 1880, becoming a church two years later, with Nathan Hunt of Scotch Woods as the pastor. They first met in the Associates Building in the Village, but shortly thereafter built their church in Dorchester. Another group was formed in East Milton in 1886, and two years later they used as their first home one of the buildings

The Church

of the Forbes private school on Adams Street, in which the new Milton Academy started. The other little school building became the Children's Church established by Dr. Pomeroy at the Unitarian Church. The present building of the First Baptist Church was erected in 1893. At the other end of town we find the Mattapan Baptist Church commencing in 1894, building its church in 1901, and completely remodeling it in later years.

The Parkway Church (Methodist) was started in 1844 at the Boston side of Mattapan and in 1926 it moved to Milton.

St. Michael's Episcopal Church first assembled in a hall in the Village in 1895, and two years later a mission was started in East Milton. In the closing years of the century the present church and rectory were built. The mission became The Church of Our Saviour in 1923. Its building dates from 1914.





Town Meeting

A town meeting is a single gathering of the voters of the Town, called for the purpose of considering only those subjects distinctly set forth in the warrant by which the citizens are summoned. . . . It is . . . a pure democracy, where the citizens as to matters within their jurisdiction, administer the affairs of the town in person. It exercises both legislative and executive functions. The freest discussion prevails, yet in some respects its proceedings are inherently somewhat summary. . . . The ample powers possessed by moderators, recognized from earliest times and growing out of the imperative needs of the office, are inconsistent with many incidents of ordinary parliamentary law.

Justice Rugg in *Wood vs. Milton*, 197 Mass. 533.

THE study of the gradual growth of New England town government has attracted the attention of many scholars, and many theories have been advanced as to its ancestry and derivation. Toward the end of the last century a school arose which believed that the New England town meeting was a direct inheritance from the Germans, while others questioned this and many learned papers were written. I think that the best statement of the question of origins is that of the late Prof. Edward Channing: "[The towns] grew by the exercise of English common-sense and political experience, combined with the circumstances of the place."¹ Fortunately the Dorchester, and later the Milton, records are complete enough to allow us to study this growth in these two towns, both of which we can claim as our own, the one up until 1662, the other since that time. Dorchester was apparently the first town to adopt several of the basic offices and procedures of New England town gov-

1. *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2nd Series, Vol. VII, p. 262.

History of Milton

ernment. The entire growth of local government can be followed in detail in the records of these two towns, and one may watch the initial concept shift, change, and adapt itself to new conditions and new requirements.

The Dorchester settlers had come over as an organized company, and probably continued to operate as a joint stock company for the first two or three years. In the "Dorchester Records"² the first entry concerning local government is one made in October of 1633 which decreed that a general Town Meeting was to be held each month, and at the same time twelve men were chosen to represent the voters. The record is not entirely clear, but within a year we find these men, now ten in number, meeting monthly and carrying on the affairs of the Town. Here we clearly have the first Selectmen.³ In the year 1634 the townspeople also elected a Bailiff, whose duties were to collect fines and taxes. In Old England the Bailiff had been the executive officer of the Sheriff; here he was agent for the Selectmen, who as yet were not so known, but were called "the ten men". After 1644 they were usually referred to by their present name. At one period the Dorchester Selectmen were required to report their actions to a monthly Town Meeting for approval, but this practice seems to have been short-lived.

Thus within five years of the first settlement in Boston Bay we find Dorchester governed by a town meeting which elected Selectmen to whom it delegated the powers of government and a Bailiff to execute their orders. The Town held the power of recall firmly in its hands by normally electing to office for six months only, but before many years had passed elections were for a year. The Selectmen appear from the very first to have used their powers to appoint minor officials and small groups of citizens who were the genesis of the town committee, that tool so long and so successfully used in New England town government. In 1636 we find "cunstbles" and an Auditor to verify their accounts. At about this same time there appear Fence Viewers, officials whose duty it was to see that all land was fenced as directed, and that the fences were properly maintained, quite a different duty

2. 4th Report of Record Commissioners of Boston, 1880 and 1883.

3. The first selectmen have been claimed for other towns, such as Charlestown in 1635, but the Dorchester Records were not easily available for study at the time when these claims were first made. Watertown also makes the claim, giving a date of 1634 for their selectmen.

Town Meeting

from that of today when they merely arbitrate boundary disputes. There is no record of the election of these last officials, and I assume them to have been appointed by the Selectmen. There is no way of telling the relationship between the Constables and the Bailiff, but the latter shortly drops out, while the Constables become very important town officials for many years to come. They carried, as a badge of office, a black staff some five and a half feet long, tipped with five inches of brass at the top.

"The Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England", to give them the full and formal title, in 1658 outlined the duties of the Constable:

"To whip and punish—to convey persons on to another constable⁴—to speed hue and cries and to execute them in the absense of a magistrate—to arrest without warrant for drunkenness, swearing, etc.,—to search—to order bystanders to assist—to carry his black staff, that none may plead ignorance—to levy fines—to collect taxes—to report those who refuse to watch and ward (or to provide a substitute)—to provide standard weights and measures—to serve attachments in civil suits—to arrest with warrant in criminal cases—to warn freemen to vote—to report name of deputies elected—to call coroner's jury for unnatural deaths—to report unlicensed newcomers—to pay £5 fine for refusing to serve if elected constable."

In the early days before there was a Town Collector or Treasurer the Constables also paid out funds as directed by the Selectmen.

These were important officers; only a scant few of their duties have been handed down to the Constables of today. It was a far from popular office, as it involved much work, particularly in the collection of taxes, which, normally being about two-thirds in produce, required much physical labor. Moreover and much worse, once a tax warrant had been turned over to a Constable for collection, he was responsible for producing all the taxes called for, and any shortages were to be assessed against his personal estate. In practice Milton does not seem to have enforced this requirement of making

4. When, for example, a Quaker was banished from Massachusetts Bay, he was escorted through a town by the Constable, who passed him on to the Constable of the next town, and so on until he had passed out of the jurisdiction of the Bay.

History of Milton

good a deficiency. If a Constable could convince the Town Meeting that he had really attempted to collect from someone who could not pay, the Town apparently forgave him the amount.

The Province was not so forgiving, at least in later years. Elijah Wadsworth had been elected Constable for the east end of the town in 1760, and in 1761, 1764, and 1765 had been hired as a substitute by those duly elected. Something went wrong in his last year of service and he either failed to collect the tax warrant delivered to him by the Province or to turn in the proceeds of the collection. Sheriff Stephen Greenleaf of Suffolk County, acting under a warrant of the Provincial Treasurer, Harrison Gray, seized Wadsworth's house and land and sold them at auction.

In 1645 Dorchester provided that notice of a Town Meeting could be given to the congregation in the Meeting House, or by a messenger going from door to door and notifying the householders. Absence at that time called for a fine of sixpence unless one had been excused from attendance. The Selectmen were to propose the various actions to the meeting, "avoydinge all janglings". Everyone was allowed a chance to speak, but confusion was to be avoided. One of the Selectmen was to be appointed moderator to run the meeting and all speakers were directed to address themselves to him.

The Selectmen, with the powers delegated to them by the Town, and with the Constables to carry out their orders, collect taxes, disburse funds, and maintain the peace, would appear to have required little further help, but they had to make their own living and could not be expected to devote all their time to the good of the Town, particularly since, as far as I have been able to determine, all these officers at this period served without pay. By 1640 we find Supervisors of Highways elected to build and maintain the roads, assessing labor and costs upon the townsmen.

At this same time the first Pound Keeper appears in Dorchester, and committees are now being used to lay out lots of land and for similar duties. The record is not clear enough to show how often Town Meeting was held; it most certainly was several times a year as important matters came up. In 1645 "raters" (Assessors) appear, as well as a School Committee, but this last Committee was soon to drop out and hand its duties over to the Select-

Town Meeting

men for almost two centuries. Three more officials came on the scene within a very few years, the Clerk of the Market,⁵ the Hog Reeve, who saw that pigs were restrained as ordered or correctly yoked and ringed, and that most important person, the "Recorder" or Town Clerk. Just before Milton was set off from Dorchester a Sealer of Weights and Measures took over that duty from the Constables, and three "commissioners to end small causes" were elected to act as a local court for minor cases. Thus at the time that Milton started its separate existence almost three hundred years ago the mother town had the following elected officers and officials:

5 Selectmen	4 Supervisors of Ways
3 Assessors	1 Sealer of Weights and Measures
1 Bailiff and 2 Constables	1 Clerk of the Market
1 Town Clerk	3 Justices for minor cases

We know practically nothing about the actual operation of Town Meeting in those days. There does not appear to have been a moderator elected as in later times, but by 1644 the "seven men" of Dorchester had a "moderator", or chairman of the Selectmen, and it is evident from the record that he conducted the meeting, and later gave his name to the officer who presides today.⁶ One important and interesting innovation was introduced in Dorchester in 1642, and it has continued in effect down to this very day. It was found that there was so much confusion and disorder in Town Meeting that something had to be done to improve conditions and get the Town's business accomplished. In this year the Selectmen ordered, and the Town did

5. The duty of this office, when it was first decreed by the General Court, was to establish the regulated price to be charged for bread. In later years the Clerk had the duty of visiting all bakers at least weekly, and of making certain that their loaves were up to standard weight.

6. The term "moderator" as referring to Town Meeting, first appeared in the Boston records in 1659. Watertown in 1667 "ordered that when the selectmen call the towne together: they shall apoynte one of themselves as moderator to carry on the worke and business of the day". The office is first mentioned in the Milton Records in 1706, and in 1714 in Brookline. The General Court in 1715 reported that "... by reason of the disorderly carriage of some persons in said meetings the ... business is very much retarded and obstructed:" and ordered that every town should elect a moderator to control town meeting and granted to this officer very ample powers. The number of selectmen elected in Dorchester varied throughout the early years. They were called the "ten men" or the "seven men" at this period.

History of Milton

not gainsay them, that all matters and questions to be acted upon in Town Meeting must first be brought to "the seven men" (Selectmen) who would consider them and present them to the Town. Here is the introduction of the Warrant, that useful instrument which today still ensures that Town Meeting will keep its nose to the grindstone, consider only what it should, and not go baying off the track on false scents. For many years to come, and in fact down almost to our times, this basic requirement was sufficient, and the Selectmen were able to consider and recommend action to the Town for its pleasure. The greater complications and added duties of today's broadened town activities ultimately resulted in the development of a separate Warrant Committee which took over this particular duty from the Selectmen.

The Colony's "Body of Liberties" in 1641 had made all men free to attend Town Meeting, and in 1647 a new law provided that all men might vote on all Town affairs and might be elected to all Town offices. It was only the right to elect deputies to the General Court that was now restricted to "freemen" or members of an established Congregational Church. Many members of a church cared little about the franchise and did not wish to become freemen, for the Bay Colony Record for 11 November 1647 says: "There being . . . many members of churches who exemp ymselves from all publicke service . . . will not come in to be made freemen" In 1664 the Colony law was modified to allow all those who wished it to become freemen, regardless of church membership, provided that they were orthodox in their beliefs. This was the result of pressure brought on Massachusetts Bay by King Charles II. At this period there was a property qualification of a taxable estate of at least £20 required of all voters.

There was nothing in the early Colony laws that prescribed form and procedure for town government,⁷ yet the town meeting seems to have developed in much the same form in all the towns. The earliest Milton records are scanty and not very literate, but there was a most interesting vote passed in December of 1669, which outlined the duties of our Selectmen:

7. The duties of the various officials were usually specified by law, but towns evidently had considerable freedom as to filling or not filling certain offices.

Town Meeting

- 1 They had the power to call Town Meetings, but the Town could meet without their call.
- 2 One Selectman was to "commend" to the Town matters to be considered at the meeting.
- 3 They had power to fine those refusing service to the Town (refusing to serve when elected to office).
- 4 They were responsible for seeing that the minister's salary was collected and paid to him.
- 5 They were to maintain the Meeting House and the Parsonage at the Town's cost, but not to spend over forty shillings a year.
- 6 They had the power to assess taxes and to pay out funds.
- 7 They were to report annually on the collection and expenditure of all tax money.
- 8 A final duty is not clearly defined.

In the earlier years of its existence it appears that Milton got along without some of the usual town officers. Selectmen and Constables were essential and could operate all the machinery of town government provided they were able to devote sufficient time to it. In 1670 three "commissioners to end small causes" were added to the list of officers elected, and in this same year the Selectmen appointed Fence Viewers, while the first record appears of the Town Clerk, Thomas Holman. The Town also decreed a fine of fifteen shillings for anyone who refused election to office.

The Dorchester Records for 1671 show that the Selectmen at that period had taken it upon themselves to act as local magistrates in connection with minor infractions of the law, such as idleness, entertaining people from out of town, dissolute living and excessive drinking, and that they levied fines. The Milton Selectmen very probably did much the same.

Shortly before the old charter was lost a new town officer appeared here for a few brief years, the Clerk of the Writs. He was a local town official who could issue legal writs for townspeople which were good in all the courts of the Colony, thus allowing a citizen to initiate a legal action without having to take the time to go to his county seat.

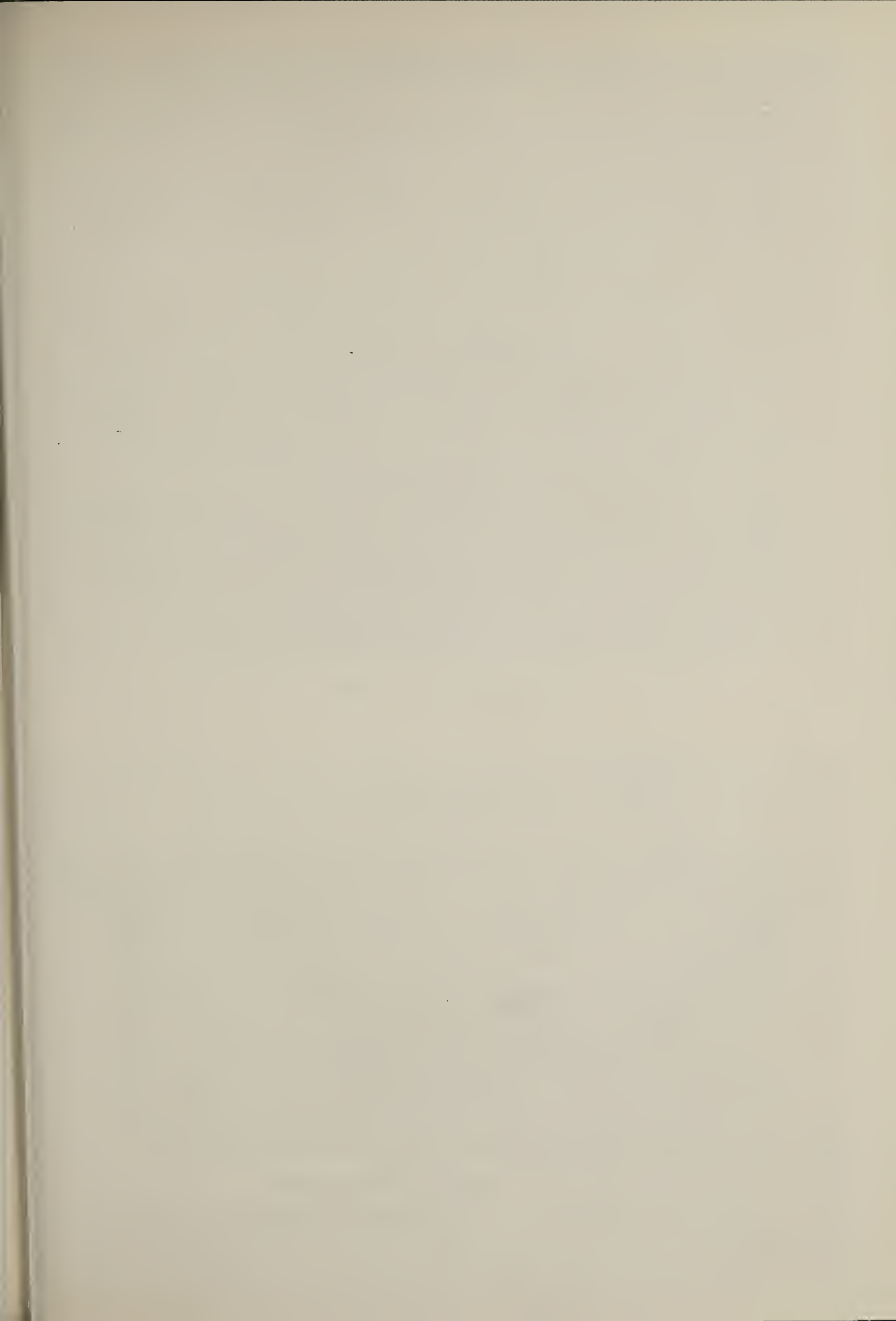
At this period we find Surveyors of Highways elected, but eventually the duty of these officers would be returned to the Selectmen. In 1674 we have a

History of Milton

record of the offices filled at our Town Meeting: five Selectmen, three Assessors, two Surveyors of Highways, and a Constable. There is no mention of the Recorder or Town Clerk, but I am sure that there was one. Sometimes the Town elected and sent a Deputy to the General Court, quite often nobody was sent and the Town fined for its neglect. In 1679 the Pound Keeper⁸ first appears in the person of Lanslet Perce, and next year Nathaniel Pitcher, the tanner, became Sealer of Leather, destined solemnly to inspect and pass leather of his own tanning, for he was then the only tanner in Milton so far as I can determine.

In this same year the General Court ordered all Towns to elect Tithingmen and specified their duties, which were not in the slightest concerned with tithes. In Old England a tithing had been a very small unit of government, a community too small to be a parish or town, and the tithing man was its head man. By the time of the Puritan emigration the office had become essentially that of a sub-constable, whose duties were the same, but whose field of endeavor was more limited than that of the constable of the town or parish. The General Court of the Bay Colony assigned the Tithingmen to two major fields of operation, the inspection of all licensed houses of entertainment, including search for and arrest of all drunkards and illegal sellers of liquors, and maintenance of the observance of the Sabbath laws. They were also concerned with all forms of disorder, including dealing with stubborn children. Toward the end of the seventeenth century they were given the added duty of enforcing the Province laws preventing cruelty to animals. Eventually they were to become in effect Sunday constables concerned only with the proper observance of the Sabbath, but initially they were junior constables, without the writ-serving and tax-collecting duties. At a little later date they were directed to carry a black staff, two feet long, tipped with brass for about three inches, while by the beginning of the last century their staff was quite long and slender. Milton in 1681 appointed five Tithingmen, and also a Clerk of the Market.

8. The pound was a railed (later stone-walled) area, perhaps six yards square, with a locked gate. Stray animals were caught and impounded in it. The owners could repossess their stock by paying a fee to the pound keeper.



(51)
Sphrom notation: James Althorn since Cavalier more 5
Ebenezer Clap - Roger Sumner were appointed sitting men in Milton
by the select men for the year 1681.

the 10 of march 1681²: John Ringly was appointed of the
law directd by the select men to bee Clarke of the market
in the Towne of Milton: *up 100.*

at a publick Town meeting in Milton 82 it was shon
voted by the Town that every family in the Town
should having warning to help with a hand or time to mend
the high ways and if any person were defective it should
be gathered by the Constable in the next Town Rate
by order of the select men to bee disposed of for the
Town use.

John Ringly was chosen ^{13th 4^{mo}} in 82 to be the Clarke
of the writs in the Town of Milton:
July 82 John Ringly was approved by the County Court
to be Clerk of the writs
up 22.

PAGE FROM MILTON TOWN RECORDS

Notification.

THE Freeholders and other Inhabitants of the Town of Milton; qualified as the Law directs, are hereby notified to meet at the Meeting-House on Monday the 16th Day of May Instant, at 1 o'Clock in the Afternoon, then and there to Elect and Depute one Person, being a Freeholder, and resident in this Town, to serve for and represent them in a Great and General Court or Assembly, appointed to be convened, held and kept for his Majesty's Service, at the Town House in Boston, upon Wednesday the 25th Day of said May.—To chuse a Moderator to regulate said Meeting.—To act upon any Articles that were referred from last March Meeting, to the next May Meeting.—To hear the Reports of the Town's Committees, or Requests.—To hear the Requests of some late Collectors.—To see whether the Town will chuse Men to inspect the Boys on Lord's Days as usual.—To see if the Town will build a new Pound.—To see whether the Town will procure a Number of Ploughs, to be used in mending High Ways.—To hear the Petition of the Heirs of the late Oxenbridge Thatcher, Esq; deceased, relative to the 20 Acres of Land in Dispute between the said Heirs and the Town.—To see whether the Town will act any Thing relating to the Bridge over the Trench that conduits the Water to the Slitting-Mill.—And to act upon any Thing relative to any of the foregoing Articles as the Town shall think proper.

By Order of the Select-Men,

Milton, May 5th. 1774.

AMARIAH BLAKE, Town-Clerk.

Town Meeting

If Town Meeting made annual appropriations at this period there is no record of them, other than for the minister's salary. Actually, except for the taxes demanded by the County and the Colony, there was normally little need for additional money. It is my belief that the amount to be spent on roads, schools, and the poor was left to the judgment of the Selectmen. The normal procedure of raising and handling funds was quite simple. The Selectmen gave the two Constables, one for the east and one for the west part of the town, warrants specifying how much each taxpayer was to pay. The Constables collected the produce and money, and later paid it out as directed by the Selectmen. In Peter Thacher's time the minister's "rate" was delivered to the parsonage by each taxpayer, who found a Constable there to receive and acknowledge his contribution. The County or Colony "rate" was collected by the Constables and taken to the treasurer of the unit concerned, while the produce and money raised for other purposes would be paid out as directed to the various people concerned. Those who received the payments receipted for them to the Constables. At a later period Town Collectors and Town Treasurers were to take over these duties, but for many years the Constables were the sole financial officers of the Town in addition to their other duties. No wonder that the office was unpopular, and many a good Milton citizen preferred to pay the fine, eventually raised to £5, rather than undertake this burdensome and unpaid duty.

A man elected as constable could avoid serving in either of two ways. He could refuse the office, in which case he was fined £5, equivalent to at least \$250.00 today, or he could arrange to hire a substitute to fill the office for him. We find several examples of both of these methods of evading the office in the Milton Records.

The first more or less complete record of a Milton Town Meeting appears under the date 16 February 1682-83. The voters acted on five articles.

- 1 They raised some money for the support of a pauper.
- 2 They instructed the Assessors to speed their action.
- 3 They elected a committee to assign seats in the Meeting House.
- 4 They elected a Deputy to the General Court.
- 5 They elected jurymen.

History of Milton

Then they held another Town Meeting six days later and elected five Tithingmen.

There is a still more complete record for the next year, 1683–84.

1 The Selectmen accounted for last year's taxes.

The voters then:

2 Elected three Assessors—William Blake, Thomas Vose, Ebenezer Clapp.

3 Elected a Constable—Ephraim Tucker.

4 Elected five "townsmen" (selectmen)—Anthony Gulliver, Thomas Holman, Thomas Swift, George Sumner, Ralph Houghton.

5 Elected a Town Clerk—"Mr Holman".

6 Elected two Surveyors of Highways—James Atherton, Teague Crehore.

7 Voted to raise a tax of £65, one-third in money (minister's salary)

8 Voted to raise a tax of £21. 13s. 4d. for Town expenses.

The first mention of Overseers of the Poor is recorded in 1688, when they assessed a poor rate of £15.6s.0d. on the taxpayers. There is no further reference to this office for many years, its duties normally being exercised by the Selectmen.

In 1689 we find the first record of any salary for a Town officer, when the Town Clerk was voted ten shillings a year, even in those days a fairly paltry sum. When the Town sent a Deputy to the General Court it appears to have paid him a salary and travel expenses, but for many years the other officers served without pay. Early in the eighteenth century a Town Treasurer appears, and the Constables must have greatly approved his coming.

The March meeting of 1710–11 is completely reported for the first time, and gives us an outline of a normal fully developed Town Meeting of the early Provincial days. One thing we would like to know is lacking, and that is who conducted the meeting. There is no record of electing a moderator, and I presume that the moderator or chairman of the Board of Selectmen took the chair. This meeting did the following:

1 Voted to build a new pound with square posts and sawn rails.

2 Voted that the rear seats in the gallery of the Meeting House should be for the boys.

3 Chose a committee to repair the Meeting House.

Town Meeting

- 4 Appropriated money for the care of a pauper.
- 5 Voted to raise a tax of £68 for Town expenses.
- 6 Voted to have three Selectmen this year.
- 7 Elected them—Capt. Gulliver, Ephraim Tucker, Ebenezer Wadsworth.
- 8 Elected a Town Clerk—Ephraim Tucker.
- 9 Elected two Constables—Thomas Holman, James Tucker.
- 10 Elected a Clerk of the Market—Ezra Clapp.
- 11 Elected three Surveyors of Highways—Joseph Hunt, Timothy Crehore, Benjamin Fenno.
- 12 Elected two Tithingmen—Moses Belcher, Nath. Blake.
- 13 Elected two Fence Viewers—Peter White, John Hersey.
- 14 Elected two Haywards—John Kinsley, Thomas Glover.

These last officials derived their name from the English Hedge Warden, but their duties were not the same. They were also known as Field Drivers, and it was their duty to seize and impound stray animals, for which service they received, at about this period, a shilling for a horse or cow, and three-pence for a sheep or pig.

The meeting outlined above decided all matters requiring action except the election of a Deputy to the General Court. This was often, and in the later days always, taken up at a separate meeting. When Andros was Governor the towns were limited to one meeting a year, to be held in the month of May. The new Charter of 1691 provided that the annual meeting should be held in March, in accordance with the warrant issued by the Selectmen, and all were to be warned to attend by the Constables. This charter decreed no material change, but it formalized the method and procedure of town government which had gradually come into being under the old Bay Colony. In 1715 a new act provided that ten freeholders could require the Selectmen to insert an article in the warrant, and this has continued down to the present day, as has the requirement, first instituted in this same year, of a poll if seven voters doubt the Moderator's ruling on a voice vote. This act also provided that a Moderator must first be chosen before the meeting could commence.

Scholars have recently become aware of the fact that in Massachusetts in

History of Milton

the period before the Revolution widows who were taxpaying heads of households were allowed to vote, presumably on the same basis as men, but certainly on all town matters. This may not have been general, but the condition is known to have existed in at least a half-dozen Massachusetts towns. The right, or perhaps it was more a custom than a true legal right, appears to have been extinguished by the new State Constitution which became effective after independence was gained. Women were allowed, however, to vote in church and parish matters, but this lost much of its importance when the disestablishment of the church took place. We have one very clear bit of evidence that some women were permitted to vote in Milton. At the town meeting of 27 November 1721 twenty-seven voters demanded to have their names recorded in opposition to a certain vote. Included in this group were four women, and reference to the tax lists of the period show that all four were widows who paid a material property tax.

The Milton Town Meeting is a form of local government which is over three hundred years old, and, with the single major exception of substituting representative town meeting members for the entire mass of legal voters, it is operating under rules and form which have continued without basic change for two hundred and forty years. No form of local government could be better than that in which each year the freemen assemble, elect their executive officers for the following year, instruct them in those cases in which they see fit, decide how much money shall be spent for various operations, and tax themselves for the total sum. In theory it is simple, sane, and logical, and in practice it has worked for almost three centuries while Milton has grown from a hamlet of a handful of families to a town of many thousands.

The normal operation of any town is easily carried on by the usual officers, but from the very beginning it was realized that the abnormal could best be met by special means. This was the Committee. Dorchester used it in the very earliest period, and it became a normal agency in the furthering of town government. Committees have two major advantages, they avoid placing an additional load on the town officers, and they allow the use of specially qualified people, of those who would not normally be elected to town office, and of people who, not being Town officers, could take a more

Town Meeting

detached and judicial attitude. Milton has used committees for everything from determining who should have the best seats in the Meeting House down to being responsible for the design and construction of a school building. One committee, the Warrant Committee, of which I shall speak later, has become a permanent part of town government, but the average committee throughout Milton's history has been appointed for a specific purpose, and usually for only a year, and it has ceased to exist when its purpose has been accomplished.

Town government by the first quarter of the eighteenth century had reached a degree of maturity sufficient to make it needless to describe it further in detail. Various new offices appear from time to time; a Surveyor of Hemp and Flax in 1736, and a little later, as the result of the Provincial law of 1739, two Deer Reeves, or enforcers of the game laws protecting deer, were elected. It is of interest to note that as early as 1694 there was a six months closed season on deer in all of Massachusetts, which then included Maine, and in 1718 the season was closed entirely for three years on account of the great scarcity of these animals.

At the March 1748-49 meeting a suggestion of tighter control appeared when the Selectmen were directed to itemize the drafts they made on the Treasurer. In 1766 it was voted to pay the Constables £5 each for collecting the taxes, but in the next year a Collector was chosen who presumably took this duty over from the Constables. There is no record at this date as to whether the Collector was paid, but at a slightly later time it was customary to auction off the office to the candidate who would collect the taxes for the lowest salary.

In 1779 Massachusetts re-enacted a law of 1742 which allowed towns to appoint one or more persons to inspect for smallpox, and in that year Dr. Holbrook and Dr. Sprague were appointed a committee of inspection under this law. This can be considered the first appearance of a Board of Health, even though the committee was not continued after a year or two. Thirty years later the Town was to take up the smallpox question in a major and epoch-making way, but this will be described in another chapter.

The requirements of town government had continued to increase, and by

History of Milton

1810 there were sixty-eight town offices to fill. This compares with perhaps not over eight or ten in the late 1600's, and with the fifty-seven elected officers of today, in addition to which there are a number appointed by the Selectmen.

The final separation between the Town and the Congregational Church resulted in the disappearance of an office of long standing; after 1835 there was no further election of Tithingmen and the observance of the Sabbath laws was left in the hands of the Constables.

The Town Clerk's records are quite complete throughout this period, but at best they only include the warrant, the officials elected, and the votes of Town Meeting. There was no other formal record and little detail has been preserved for us. Charles Francis Adams in speaking of Quincy town government might equally well be speaking of that of Milton.

"Prior to 1810 all business had been done in a loose, unsystematic way. The annual appropriations were made by viva voce vote; the treasurer received the money which the constable collected; and the selectmen drew it out and paid it over to the minister, the schoolmaster, and those who cared for the Town's poor. No report or estimates were made; no papers were placed on file. Everything was done on a general understanding. A cruder, less organized system could not be imagined. All that could be said was that it was natural, and, like most natural things, it worked well under the circumstances."⁹

For some two centuries almost all of Milton's officials served without any salary at all. The burden of governing was one which all were expected to share, except that those officials who had to devote a very considerable amount of time to the Town's work were, as time went on, paid a relatively small sum. It would appear that in 1751 the Selectmen asked to be paid for their services, but the Town voted that they should receive no pay.

The Town Treasurer in the mid-1700's received an annual salary of from £2 to £5, but, since this was paid in "old tenor" depreciated bills, it did not represent much purchasing power. In 1747 the Surveyors of Highways received six shillings a day for the time actually worked. In 1770 the Collector

9. *Three Episodes in Massachusetts History* (Boston, 1892), Vol. II, p. 916.

Town Meeting

received £8. 15s. od., and the next year the office was awarded to Joshua Vose, who made the low bid of £10. 10s. od., and was duly elected.

Milton's first detailed financial report was prepared for the year 1837-38, and it lists the various annual salaries then paid:

Selectmen	\$ 25.50 to \$30.00
Town Clerk	\$ 5.00
Town Treasurer	\$ 15.00
Overseers of the Poor	\$ 20.00
Constables	\$ 15.00
Collector	\$238.00 (but only \$169.96 in 1838-39)
School Committee	\$ 5.00 to \$8.00

The total expenditures for the Town for this year are of interest.

New Town House	\$2835.43
Cemetery improvements	\$1070.25
Poor and Highways	\$2401.89
Bridges	\$ 142.40
New Road	\$ 287.00
Sign Boards	\$ 29.86
Schools	\$1799.65
Pay of Town Officers	\$ 434.02
Abatement of Taxes	\$ 163.34
Refund of Poll Taxes to Firemen	\$ 48.00
Miscellaneous	\$ 72.91
	<u>\$9284.75</u>

Elsewhere I have described the first appearance of the School Committee as a special advisory committee, its later development into a State-authorized but practically powerless body, and finally its full assumption of control of the schools from the School Districts. Auditors had been appointed or elected at various times and for various purposes over a long period of years, but beyond making a verbal report to Town Meeting they left no records. Suddenly, however, in 1838 the Auditors issued a printed report of the financial activities of the Town, and this practice was continued each year. Eventually reports of the Selectmen and other officers and committees were included, and the annual Town Report had come into being. The initial reports are merely summaries of funds received and paid out, and one must read be-

History of Milton

tween the lines, but by about the time of the Civil War considerable additional information has crept into the booklet. By 1880 we would clearly recognize the ancestor of our present report, and twenty years later it would be much like that of today.

Town Meeting would not proceed as smoothly and rapidly as it does were it not for one relatively new innovation in town government. Milton quite properly calls it the Warrant Committee, while other towns call it the Finance or Advisory Committee. Our name is really the most correct, for the committee's basic purpose is the taking over of a duty assigned to the Selectmen by Town Meeting in 1669, the duty of recommending to the Town the action to be taken on the various articles in the warrant.

Until about a century and a half ago the Selectmen were the only important executive officers of the Town, all major operations were in their hands, and they of course were entirely familiar with them. Practically all changes in Town government which have taken place since about 1800 have been in the direction of taking away existing duties and responsibilities from the Selectmen, or in case of new duties and powers, of assigning them to new sets of town officers. When we stop to think that since 1800 we have added to the officers of the Town the School Committee, the Board of Health, Park Commissioners, Library and Cemetery Trustees, Sewer and Water Commissioners, the Board of Public Welfare, and the Planning Board, we can appreciate with how much relatively smaller a part of the town government the Selectmen are now concerned. It naturally follows that, without much additional time and energy, they are no longer intelligently able to recommend to the Town the action that should be taken on many of the articles appearing in the warrant.

As early as 1841 we find the Milton Selectmen advising the Town to establish a "committee of finance" to make estimates of the sums of money necessary to raise the next year. As with many another recommendation no action was taken at that time. The origin of the Finance Committee is obscure; Brookline had one by 1893, and it is believed that Quincy originated the idea at least as early as 1887 and probably some years earlier. Milton's March Meeting of that same year established our Warrant Committee, which



MEETING.

The Inhabitants of the Town of Milton, qualified to Vote in Town Affairs, are hereby notified to meet at the **TOWN HOUSE**, in said Milton, on Monday, the thirteenth day of March next, at One o'clock, P. M. to act on the following articles, viz.

1. To choose a Moderator.
2. To choose all necessary Town Officers for the year ensuing.
3. To determine what sum of Money the Town will appropriate the ensuing year for the support of Schools, and how it shall be apportioned.
4. To raise such sums of Money for defraying the necessary expenses of the Town, for the year ensuing, as may be thought proper.
5. To know how the Town will have their Highways repaired the ensuing year.
6. To know how the Town will have their Poor supported the ensuing year.
7. To bring in their votes for County Treasurer.
8. To choose a Committee to examine the Town Treasurer's accounts.
9. To choose a Committee of Vaccination.
10. To choose a Committee on Landing places.
11. To hear and act on the report of any Town Committee.
12. To see if the Town will accept Cross Street, leading from the Old Plymouth Road to the New Road which is connected with Willard Street in Quincy.
13. To consider and determine whether the Town will authorise the Selectmen to agree with Mr. Ebenezer Pope, to widen the Road at the Corner of his Land, leading to Squantum.

By order of the Selectmen,

HENRY WEST, Constable.

Milton, Feb. 27, 1843.

N. B.—The Selectmen will be in session at the Town House, on Saturday, the 11th day of March next, from 7 to 9 o'clock, P. M. and on Monday, the 13th, one hour previous to opening the meeting, for the purpose of receiving qualifications of voters.

Town Meeting

then consisted of eight legal voters, plus the chairman of the Selectmen and of the School Committee, and the Superintendent of Highways. This committee was without any authority other than that delegated to it by the Town. As years went on the idea spread to other towns, and eventually became required by State statute for all towns above a certain minimum size. By 1902 our committee had grown to fifteen, including the chairmen of the Selectmen and of the School Committee, and its duties were identical with those of today. Very briefly these duties may be summarized as that of becoming familiar with all matters to be voted upon in Town Meeting, of recommending in print how the Town should vote, and how much it should appropriate, and that of approving transfers from the contingent, or reserve, fund. A town at its annual meeting makes appropriations for its annual expenditures, and these are assessed upon the taxpayers, collected and expended. Should some sudden emergency arise there might very well be no funds to meet it, and a special Town Meeting would have to be held with further appropriations and the raising of another tax. The establishment of the reserve fund allowed additional funds to be made available without the expense and inconvenience of an additional meeting. If emergency funds were not needed, they were not drawn upon, and the money reverted to the Town. There is another added advantage, although perhaps a minor one. The availability of such funds allows the unexpected to be discounted in the budget estimate, and the amount requested may be kept a little smaller in size.

Two offices which so far have only been mentioned deserve further consideration. The Moderator originally was chosen at the start of each meeting, and for many years there was very apt to be a different moderator each time that the Town met. The office was normally voted to a prominent citizen, and while few held it continuously for any length of time, many held it a number of times over succeeding years. It is an office which should be exercised by an absolutely fair, unbiased, and non-partisan person, and over the years many outstanding citizens have been honored by election to this position. In the older days town government was simple, but today it is much more involved, particularly in the number of committees which must be appointed by the Moderator. It has been found desirable for the best interests

History of Milton

of the Town to continue a Moderator in office year after year, thus broadening his experience and knowledge of today's much larger town, things which are essential to the selection of committee members who are fairly and truly representative of the entire population.

The Town Clerk has always been a person of importance. While this office of itself is essentially one of recording facts and issuing licenses, it has always had a very considerable indirect power, due partly to the prestige of the office, and also to a considerable extent, I believe, to the contact and thus the knowledge and friendship that the Town Clerk has with the populace. Over the years Milton has been very prone to get a good Town Clerk and then to hang on to him. He is an agent that does much to keep the machinery of town government turning over smoothly.¹⁰

In New England the Counties never have been very important units of government. They were initially formed in 1643, but some seven years before, the General Court had established what were in effect four County Courts. Shortly after the Counties appeared, the militia was organized into four regiments, one to each County. Essentially the only contact that Milton had with Suffolk County for many years was through the law courts and the militia. Eventually the County took over responsibility for certain highways and bridges. Today the State has assumed most of this, and the County is concerned, practically speaking, only with courts of law, jails, and certain aspects of health.

Under the old Charter the judiciary had consisted of three levels, County Courts, where one or more of the Assistants sat as magistrates; the Quarter Courts consisting of all the Assistants as a body; and finally the General Court, composed of the Governor, Assistants, and Deputies. Prior to the coming of Andros the General Court had never established any precise requirements for town government, leaving each town to adjust its procedure to its best needs. Despite this freedom, there appears to have been little difference between one town and the next. Under the new Charter of 1691 the General Court specified the town officers and their duties, and also estab-

10. Today it is a "she" who perhaps has started a new custom in the choice of Milton's Town Clerks.

Town Meeting

lished "four courts or quarter sessions of the peace". These were County Courts staffed by Justices of the Peace appointed by the Governor and Council. Any order or bylaw passed by a town had to be approved by the Court of Quarter Sessions of its County before it could become effective. Various attempts were made by Milton and some adjoining towns to break away from Suffolk County, but it was not until 1792 that their efforts were successful, and Norfolk County was formed.

Milton's Town Meeting was held in the Meeting House from the earliest days until 1835, when the Unitarian Church secured possession of its present building, renovated it, and refused its use to the Town. For the next year or two meetings were held in the old Academy building, in the Old Stone Church at East Milton, and in the Railway House, which, later known as the Blue Bell Tavern, stood on the site of today's Milton Post Office. The Unitarian Society then relented and allowed the Town to use the Meeting House for a short period until the first "Town House" was built in 1837. This was a simple one-storied assembly hall sixty by forty feet in size, located on the approximate site of today's Town Hall. It remained in use until 1878 when the present building was erected.

In the early days Town Meetings were called whenever any important business came up, but they gradually became fewer in number. By the mid-eighteenth century there were usually two meetings, in March and in May, and sometimes a fall meeting to elect a representative to the General Court. By the early 1800's it became usual to elect officers and transact some general business at a March meeting, to vote for the Governor and other State officers in April, and finally to vote the appropriations in May. By the end of the century Town Meeting opened early on a Monday morning for election of officers, and in the afternoon and evening took up the appropriations and other business. This often resulted in long evening sessions and adjourned meetings, and in 1915 the present method of elections on a Saturday, with all other business taken up on the following Saturday was initiated.

For many years the meeting had something of a social side to it. The citizens straggled to Town Hall in the morning to vote, and then often hung around, gossiped, and talked politics. Some would bring lunch pails, while

History of Milton

others would buy something at a refreshment booth or from a pedler. At the beginning of this century and probably for some time before that, women were allowed to vote for the School Committee, and the Town Hall would have had quite a picnic appearance, always provided it was not too cold a day. Sometimes for meetings held later in the year, if the weather was warm, the voters would assemble on the lawn and transact the business under the shade of the old elms, which we have since lost through recent hurricanes. It was usual to clean up all the Town's business in one afternoon in those less complicated days.

I have been interested in attempting to determine the attendance at Town Meeting over the years. Unfortunately the records only occasionally list the number of votes cast on articles in the warrant, but by a study of all the reports that can be found I judge that the number of voters present was about as shown in the following tables.

Year	Voters	Total Population	Per cent of Population Voting
1750	70	about 650	10.7%
1800	90	1143	7.9%
1825	130	1540	8.5%
1850	185	2241	8.3%
1875	275	2738	10.0%
1920	266	9985	2.7%

It is obvious from this that the attendance at Town Meeting in the more recent years had failed to keep pace with the growth of the Town. It also brings out a serious weakness in the old Town Meeting government that developed whenever attendance at Town Meeting failed to keep up with the increase in population.

In 1750 families were large, and the 650 population probably contained not more than a hundred or so men of voting age. Thus it would appear that at least some sixty or sixty-five per cent of the eligible voters attended. In 1875 Milton was still essentially a country town and the figure would not be too different. In 1920, however, Milton was greatly changed. It was a suburban town, many of whose residents had little interest in the Town and its affairs, and no longer bothered to go to Town Meeting, although on the

Town Meeting

whole they continued to vote for Town officers. There were well over two thousand voters,¹¹ of which less than some ten or twelve per cent took the trouble to go to Town Meeting. Had an organized block of less than two hundred attended that 1920 meeting, they could have passed almost any vote they wanted, and yet they would have represented less than ten per cent of the eligible voters.

In the early days Town Meeting was one of the events of the year, and everyone would have attended who could. The voters thus represented practically the whole community, and questions were decided after free discussion among all the inhabitants. As long as Milton was a country town, a representative cross section of the community attended, discussed, and decided. Later, as conditions changed and population became greater, attendance at Town Meeting failed to keep pace, and also gradually ceased to be quite as representative as it had formerly been. I do not think that this condition ever caused any harm in Milton, as it certainly did in Quincy some seventy years ago, when an organized block took over the Town Meeting for its own ends. Here was the one major weakness of this form of government, the ability of an organized pressure group to take over complete control of the meeting when conditions had become such that a very considerable number of the legal voters failed to attend. Had they all come, the Town Hall of course would not have held them.

The problem of adapting the old form of open town meeting to a large and growing community was appreciated early in the present century. Brookline appears to have been the first Massachusetts town to adopt the new system (1915) which had been applied in Newport, Rhode Island, in 1906. Milton had appointed a committee on town government in 1917, and the 1920 Meeting instructed this committee to study and report on the desirability of adopting representative town meeting. At the same time the question of precinct voting, which had been under discussion since 1913, was again considered. It was found that Milton's population was too small to allow existing statutes to apply, and it was necessary to secure an amend-

11. In the fall of that year, after woman suffrage became effective, there were some 4000 on the voting list.

History of Milton

ment to the Constitution. Precinct voting for officers was instituted in 1924, and representative town meeting in 1928.

A town meeting held before and one held after the adoption of the new system would have appeared to the observer to be practically identical, the only noticeable difference being the somewhat better attendance at the representative town meeting. Otherwise the atmosphere, the discussions, and the voting showed no apparent change. One major and desirable result had been secured, even if it was not evident at first sight. The old meeting had been attended by those who were interested, who felt a sense of duty, or who "had an axe to grind", and the gathering by the beginning of this century had ceased to be representative of the Town as a whole. The new procedure corrected this fault, and in effect again made Town Meeting what it had been fifty years before. The old system, with a large town and many voters lacking interest or sense of duty, was always open to the threat of a relatively small but well-organized pressure group, while the new system assured that this could not happen, provided always that the election of precinct representatives never became organized and directed to some ulterior purpose. This seems hardly likely in the foreseeable future, but it is conceivable, and must be guarded against.

The last century and a half has shown a very marked decentralization in town government. At the start of that period the Selectmen controlled almost the entire operation of the Town, and practically all the annual outlay passed through their hands. Today less than 40% of the year's appropriations for local expenditures are spent under the control of the Selectmen. The School Committee alone directs the disbursement for normal operating expenses of sums almost as great.

Two factors give cohesion to this decentralized group of separate boards and committees. They are all the servants of the Town, and once each year they are required to make a formal report in print, to be prepared to answer questions, and to defend their views in Town Meeting. Each year they receive from the Town a more or less specific directive as to their actions for the next twelve months, and some are subject to pressure at other times throughout the year. The other factor is the Warrant Committee, which has



1955 TOWN MEETING



Town Meeting

in effect, at first through custom and later by statute, taken over the leadership of the meeting once exercised by the Selectmen. From a sentimental point of view this is to be regretted, from the practical it has proven most desirable, and proper leadership of Town Meeting by a conscientious, thoroughly informed, and fair-minded Warrant Committee chairman is most productive of equitable and efficient action by the Town.

Milton has had for a great many years a succession of hard-working and intelligent Warrant Committees which have built up a reputation for diligent execution of their mission, and the production of recommendations which were for the good of the whole Town and were not in the slightest affected by personal or political bias. This has been achieved through the appointment by the Moderator of Warrant Committees whose composition at all times represented a fair cross section and sampling of the various interests which compose the Town. Such a group, when working together with the over-all good of the Town at heart, is almost certain to arrive at decisions which are acceptable to the Town. In recent years the prestige which this committee has built up as the result of its reputation for fair and equitable recommendations has become such that the Town Meeting will often accept without question its recommendations for about ninety-nine per cent of the budget, and then take keen pleasure in voting it down on some minor point just to show that after all the Town Meeting is the master. If the Warrant Committee should ever degenerate into a biased or controlled group, Town Meeting has merely to take back the responsibility which it has in the final analysis only delegated to the Warrant Committee, and arrive at its own recommendations for action on the articles in the Warrant. It must always be remembered that, except in the handling of the Reserve Fund, the Warrant Committee is not an executive committee, and that its function is solely that of informing itself and then of recommending actions to the Town, which may or may not accept them.

There is one final requirement necessary to make this decentralized system operate successfully, and that is a supply of serious and conscientious citizens who will fill these many offices, most of which bring no pay, or if any, a token one only. It requires work, but it is interesting work, and hith-

History of Milton

erto there has been no difficulty in filling these offices with those who are content to serve the Town for its own sake.

It has been most interesting over the years to see how Milton has greatly changed not only its size, but also its entire complexion and the composition of its population, and yet the machinery of the old New England town continues to operate without basic change, and to give us government which while not entirely perfect, is the nearest approach to ideal local government that the world has been able to produce.

To continue it we need first of all a group of citizens who will give time to the Town and serve in its offices and on its committees without thought of personal gain. Next we require a representative Town Meeting which continues to be truly representative of the entire community. To make it relatively easy for the Town Meeting to function smoothly and efficiently we must have a Warrant Committee which is representative of the Town, free from any personal or ulterior motive, and willing to devote sufficient time to carry out its mission. Finally, in order to have that kind of Warrant Committee, as well as those special committees required from time to time, we must have a Moderator who knows the Town, has no personal bias or ambition, and makes his appointments with the good of the entire community in mind. All of these, except Town Meeting itself, may collapse in party politics and self-seeking, and good government yet be continued through the basic integrity and diversification of the Town Meeting members. It will be much harder, however, and it will be far better for the Town to continue its centuries-old tradition of electing moderators who will serve the Town and not themselves or party interests.

The Poor

THE social revolution through which we are now passing has practically removed the term "the Poor" from our language, but in the days in which I am writing this class most certainly did exist, and was always a serious concern to the Town. All inhabitants were entitled to Town aid if they were unable to care for themselves, but this was available only in the town in which they legally resided. On this account one did not change his residence at will as we do today, particularly if there appeared to be any possibility of his becoming a pauper. One of the earliest Milton records is that of 28 April 1665, which ordered that no man should settle in the town without the permission of Town Meeting¹ or of the Selectmen, on penalty of a fine of twenty shillings for each week that he was here, and that no citizen should let a house to an unauthorized out-of-towner without facing the same penalty. A little over a year previously the Town had ordered that no inhabitant should take a non-Milton resident into his household without official permission. For many years one of the sad duties of the Selectmen and Constables was to harry the poor, the infirm, and the insane from town to town, back to their legal habitation. As late as the year 1793 the Milton Constables ordered out of town a long list of Milton residents who had been born elsewhere and had never been legally accepted as inhabitants. This list included a considerable number of most prominent people, such as General Jacob Gill, Capt. John Lillie, Dr. Amos Holbrook, and Daniel Briggs, the shipbuilder. There was,

1. "At a publick town meting legally warned and held in Milton the 10 day of June 1709 it was put to vote whether thay wold reseve John Tucker to be an inhabiten in our town and it was voted that thay wold not.
Ephraim Tucker, Town Clerk."

History of Milton

of course, neither desire nor intent to enforce this order, but these people were thus legally ordered deported, and hence could never become a drain upon the Town as paupers, should they ever reach that condition.

The Overseers of the Poor are first mentioned in 1688, when one of the two was also a Selectman, but there is practically no further reference to them for many years. The Selectmen normally filled this office also, and since they did not record their expenditures we have very little knowledge as to how the poor were cared for. They were almost certainly boarded out to those citizens who would undertake their keep at the lowest rate. In 1786, for instance, it was voted "that the Poor be let out to the lowest bidder, and to be under the inspection of the Selectmen", but two years later some were evidently being given aid at home. In these years we find specific votes that the Selectmen should also be Overseers of the Poor.

In 1754 an unsuccessful attempt was made to establish a workhouse in conjunction with Braintree and Weymouth, and in December of that year a house was hired of Ebenezer Tucker, Jr., for such use, with Benjamin Crane as keeper. This could not have worked out very well since further attempts were made the next year for a co-operative arrangement with Dorchester and Stoughton. Again these came to nought. Construction of a workhouse became a lively subject in the course of a few years. In 1765 it was voted not to build one, and in 1768 it was decided to build near Canton Avenue and Pine Tree Brook. Next year the project was off, but on again in 1770. Nothing was done, however, and it was voted again at next year's March Meeting, and then the vote was reconsidered. The events leading up to the outbreak of the Revolution now drew the citizens' thoughts and finances in other directions and nothing further was accomplished.

In 1792 the Town voted that the poor should be supplied at the discretion of the Selectmen, and in 1803 the question of a workhouse came up again to plague Town Meeting. It was voted to build one, but next month the vote was reversed, and reversed again at the following March Meeting in 1804, but the house still was not built despite the instructions of Town Meeting. In November of that year the project was again put off, but it probably was completed in 1805 and certainly existed two years later, when

The Poor

Overseers of the Poor were elected separately from the Selectmen. In 1813 the Poor House, as it was now called, had a cage into which insane persons or others in need of restraint could be placed. In 1821 it was "voted that the Poor shall receive no assistance from the Town but at the Alms House (extraordinary casualties excepted) . . .", but in the following year relief outside of the Poor House was authorized.

March Town Meeting of 1834 brought in a great innovation. Gen. Whitney, Jesse Tucker, and Moses Gragg were elected Overseers, and they put into practice that system of the paupers' repairing the highways which is mentioned elsewhere. Two years later the Overseers were also elected Surveyors of Highways, and in 1838 a delightful event took place. At the April Meeting of that year the Town voted "to give the poor spirit(s) say two or three glasses per day as they behave well and work". Two or three glasses of rum a day must have furnished a lot of encouragement! There probably was collusion with Quincy, for a similar vote was passed in that town the same year, except that it was restricted to "the temperate use of ardent spirits when they work on the road or farm". At Milton's Annual Town Meeting of 1839 some blue ribbon enthusiast moved, not to reverse last year's vote, but to "expunge" it from the record. Town Meeting was coy and took the obvious refuge of referring the matter to a committee, in whose hands, as far as the record has ever revealed, it still remains. Whether or not the pleasant and reprehensible practice was continued, I cannot say, but I doubt it. A few years later it was entirely forbidden.

The Poor House was operated by a man and wife, sometimes with a hired girl to help. The man almost always doubled in brass as Superintendent of Highways. The buildings were on the forty-acre lot which Gov. William Stoughton left in his will to the Town of Milton "for the use and benefit of the poor of said Town forever". Part of the land was farmed, and some of the produce sold, but most of it was consumed by the inmates.

This general method of caring for the poor, with some at the Town Farm, and others given relief at home, continued for many years and appears to have been relatively successful. The Selectmen made an official visit to the farm at least once a year, and they usually reported that the paupers ap-

History of Milton

peared to be happy and content with their lot, but we have no record of the paupers' side of the story.

In 1855 a new almshouse was built, and various improvements were made from time to time. By 1873 the poor had ceased to work on the roads, but those that were able continued to putter around at the farm work. I suspect that the Town Farm had started to become what it certainly was in later years, an old folks' home, largely for the infirm who had no place else to go. In 1903 the Town voted to transfer the care of the poor to a board established under a new State law, and the five members were elected the following year and at once took charge. They immediately secured the services of an expert on poor relief, and proceeded to modernize the entire operation of the department. Eventually changing social conditions and vastly increasing State and Federal assistance resulted in the abandonment of the Town Farm in the period just before the Second World War.

The Highways

THE first road in Milton was of course the highway over Milton Hill, built while we were still a part of Dorchester. Just prior to Milton's incorporation as a town the present Canton Avenue was built from its junction with Adams Street to the point where it today joins Brook Road. At about this same time, Churchill's Lane was laid out from Adams Street, where the first Meeting House then stood, to Centre Street at the Cemetery, and it apparently connected with a trail that led into the Blue Hills. In 1669 Pleasant Street was built from Algerine Corner on Adams Street to approximately the point where it today joins Randolph Avenue, but it was then only a cartway and a path for cattle.

An Indian trail is believed to have run along the present line of Ruggles Lane, through the Columbine Road area to Brook Road in the vicinity of St. Mary's of the Hills, and then on to Brush Hill. This became a cartway of sorts about 1670, and some three years later a new road was built along the present line of Thacher Street from Blue Hills Parkway almost to Pine Tree Brook, where it turned sharply to the northeast and continued along the line of today's Lincoln Street until it met Brook Road, the line of which it then followed until the end of Canton Avenue was reached at Turner's Pond.

If this description of the growth of our road system becomes a little involved, it may be skipped entirely with small loss to any except those interested in this subject. The several maps showing the growth of Milton will also help to clarify the subject.

In 1673 Vose's Lane was laid out along its present location. Centre Street must by now have been continued from the Cemetery as far as the southern

History of Milton

end of this new lane, because it was near this latter point that the second Meeting House was built in 1671.

By this period there were several farms in the Brush Hill area, and some sort of cartway had existed over the hill and down to the fresh water meadows at Paul's Bridge at least as early as 1672. Two years later a footpath was laid out from the vicinity of Brush Hill Road and today's Robbins Street directly across country to about where Lincoln Street now joins Thacher Street. Within another three years Brush Hill Road was built from the Neponset at Mattapan, where no settlement existed at that time, along the line of today's Blue Hills Parkway, as far as Brook Road, where the old Indian Ponkapoag Trail led it up over Brush Hill and down again to the Neponset meadows.

The Town Records for March of 1671-72 show that a highway was laid out from the southerly end of Vose's Lane along today's Centre Street to the site of the present Library, and then along the general line of Canton Avenue "downe to Balstor's brook", but since Ezra Clapp's land, which was near Lincoln Street, is mentioned, it is probable that the road turned to the northwest along Thacher Street and met Pine Tree Brook at this point rather than at its junction with Balstor's Brook near the head of Blue Hills Parkway. The route is defined partly by the "parallel line",¹ which Canton Avenue follows from the Library to Atherton Street, but mostly by a "whit oake stumpe", "a run of water", "a blacke stumpe burned on the south sid", and similar perishable objects. I cannot determine when Canton Avenue was continued on to Pine Tree Brook. Dr. Teele believed that it was laid out in 1680, and there is an entry in the Records for 1683 that shows that the road at Pine Tree Brook at the head of today's Parkway was then practically impassable, if it existed at all. Canton Avenue was, however, continued in 1681 from Pine Tree Brook on to the Dorchester (now Canton) line southwest of Blue Hill, so it is most probable that it did also extend northeast to a junction with Thacher Street.

In 1696 a footway, later to grow into Gun Hill Street, was opened to con-

1. This was a surveyor's line running more or less northeast-southwest through the center of Milton, and parallel to the Braintree boundary.

The Highways

nect the Pleasant Street area with the Meeting House. The land to the south of the Blue Hills had gradually been settled, and by the early years of the next century there were several farms in that area. A short portion of today's Hillside Street, a section of road zigzagging along the general line of Randolph Avenue, and Highland Street were established in 1713 to give access to this section.

This completed the basic road net which was to serve the Town for almost a century, and which in fact, with four major exceptions, is the backbone of our main roads of today. A few years later Hillside Street was continued a little farther, and then swung first to the southeast and then to the southwest through the saddle of Bear Hill and Glover's Hill, and became the highway connecting Milton with Randolph and Bridgewater.

In recent years we have seen an era of building great turnpikes, but this is only a repetition of what took place a century and a half ago. The turnpike fever hit Milton in 1804 when a group of capitalists petitioned to be allowed to build Blue Hill Avenue. This was vigorously opposed by the Town, but the General Court approved, and the road was built in the next few years. It was operated as a turnpike until 1857, when the franchise was allowed to expire, and it eventually became a county highway. The old tollhouse still stands, used today as a dwelling at 211 Robbins Street. Randolph Avenue was built as another turnpike at this same period, and, unsuccessful, was eventually taken over partly by the Town and partly by the County (later the State). I trust that today's investors in turnpikes will be more fortunate than were their ancestors.

The Granite Avenue bridge over the Neponset was built in 1837, and Granite Avenue connected the growing center at East Milton with Dorchester. The last of our major roads, Brook Road, was extended from Canton Avenue to Adams Street in East Milton early in the present century. It resulted from the construction of a new Metropolitan District Commission trunk sewer, which was begun in the closing years of the last century, and finally put in operation in 1904. This is a very large trunk sewer, and its construction dried up the wells of many houses in Milton. Fortunately the Milton Water Company was then in existence, and did a thriving business

History of Milton

taking on new customers, but after a year or two the wells filled up again and the water company lost many of its new accounts. Brook Road was built along the line of the sewer once it was completed.

We have no information as to how the roads were built and maintained in the earliest days of the Town. The first record of Surveyors of Highways is in about 1669,² when two were elected in addition to the three Selectmen. The office has been continued for almost three centuries, sometimes as a separate one, but more often as an added duty borne by the Selectmen, who today are still elected to the joint office.

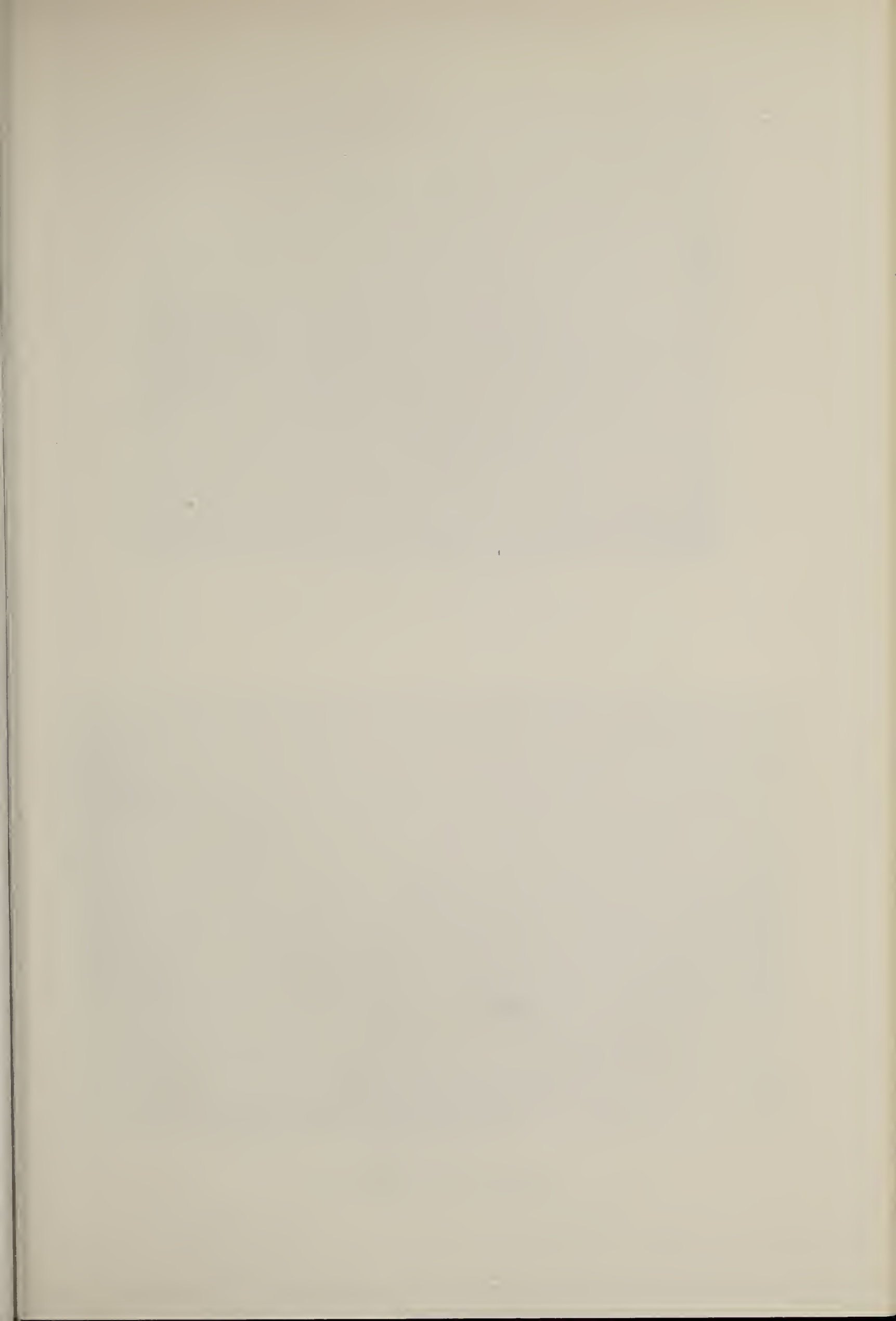
We know that, by the time of the Revolutionary period, an annual road tax was assessed, which was either paid in money or in labor. We often hear of people in the country working out their taxes on the roads. This would have been possible in Milton only in the case of the road tax, the regular Town, County, and Provincial, or State, taxes had to be paid in legal tender. The normal annual maintenance work seems to have called for one day's work per year by each man over sixteen years old, or its money equivalent as a minimum. Those who were taxed in addition to the poll tax paid or worked more, but extra credit was allowed for the furnishing of an ox team. The work was carried out under the direction of the Surveyors, who usually divided the Town up into districts.³ Construction of a new road was almost certainly carried out in the same way, the total assessment of labor or its money equivalent varying with the amount of construction required.

The roads were mud in the spring, dust in the summer, and not much to boast about at any time in between. The maintenance work probably consisted merely of picking up loose stones, filling up the worst mud holes, and a little rough leveling up, as well as keeping the bridges passable. It was not until well into the last century that modern methods of road building came into use here, although McAdam in England was introducing the construction bearing his name by the end of the 1700's.

When it was necessary to build or make major repairs to a bridge, the

2. This entry is not dated, but is entered alongside of one of that year.

3. At one time there were as many as seventeen surveyors, each presumably responsible for only a short piece of road. Usually they were fewer in number, perhaps three or thereabouts.





BLUE HILL AVENUE, ABOUT 1890
Looking south toward junction with Brush Hill Road.



EAST MILTON SQUARE
Looking toward Quincy, about 1915.

The Highways

Town customarily appointed a special committee, but all normal maintenance work, both roads and bridges, was the responsibility of the Surveyors of Highways. In 1779 it was provided that if a man warned by the Surveyors that he was due to work on the roads failed to appear, a substitute would be hired and the cost added to the absent citizen's tax.

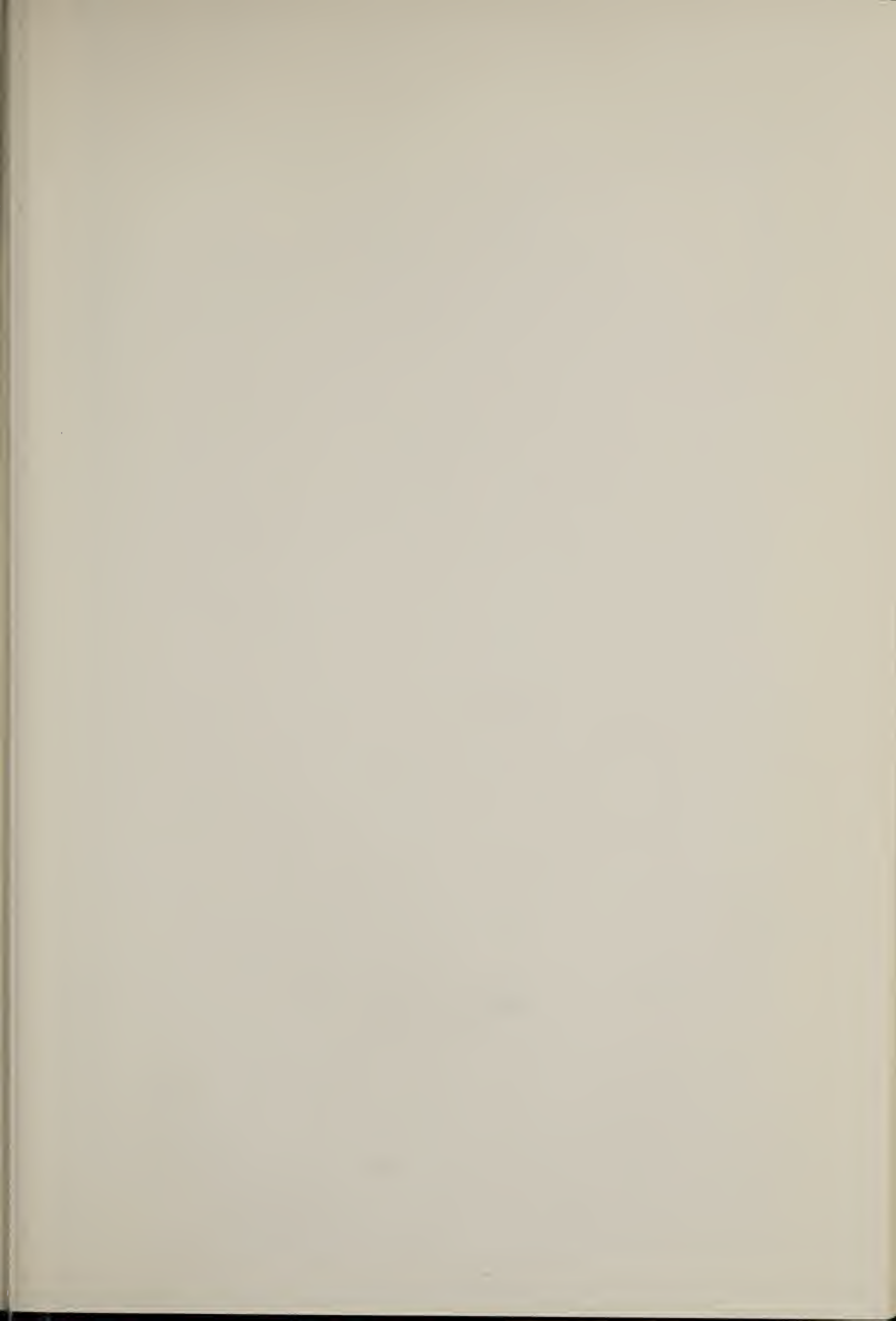
This basic system continued for many years, but an innovation was finally introduced in 1834, by which time a poorhouse or "workhouse" had been established in the Town. A superintendent was hired for this institution who knew how to make and repair roads, and the able-bodied paupers worked on the highways under his management. This system worked very well for many years, although in practice it was found necessary to hire additional labor to assist the workhouse inmates. Shortly after the Civil War all the work was done by hired labor, and our present Highway Department had its beginning as a separate tax-supported activity, supervised by the Selectmen. For a further period the superintendent was also in charge of what was soon to be known as the "Town Farm". Before many years had passed, new methods of road repair and further growth of the Town called for the full-time services of a trained man, and the Department developed into its present form. Toward the end of the century attention was devoted to improved methods of road construction, and soon various experiments were being made. By 1908 the macadamized roads were being oiled, the gravel roads sprinkled with calcium chloride, and tarvia was being applied to some stretches. In this year the practice of sprinkling all the streets with water was discontinued, and the old watering carts were soon retired. Some sprinkling had been done in the Village area not very long after the Civil War, but it was not practical to do this in other parts of the Town until water pipes were installed after 1889. The watering carts were wooden tanks about one-third the length of today's gasoline tank trucks, and a cross pipe with a series of nozzles sprayed fine jets of water out from the rear of the cart. They kept the dust down and at least made things seem a little cooler in hot weather.

Today we are interested in getting the snow off the roads at once, but it was far different in the days of the horse-drawn sleigh when a firm hard snow surface furnished the smoothest and pleasantest sort of a road that one

History of Milton

could wish. Snow rollers were used to compact and harden the snow, merely great wooden rollers some six feet in diameter by ten in length pulled along behind a pair or more of horses, or in the earlier days by an ox team.

I have no knowledge as to when the Village and East Milton were first lighted at night, but general street lighting in some parts of Milton was started in 1869. Five years later the Dorchester Gas Company put a pipe in Randolph Avenue, and two gas street lights were installed. In 1879 the Selectmen reported that there were "about one hundred and ten street lamps" erected by private subscription and lighted by naphtha and kerosene at the expense of the Town. By 1891 some of the street lights were electric, and this new method entirely replaced the old by 1904. Until electricity came into use there were lamplighters who went around lighting the lamps each night and putting them out again the next morning.





THE POLICE FORCE, ABOUT 1905

The Police

FOR almost two centuries the keeping of the peace has been the duty of the constables, assisted in some phases by the tithingmen. This latter office disappeared with the disestablishment of the Church, and the last tithingmen were elected in 1835. For the next generation only the constables acted as police, and that only upon call. This was in addition to their other duties, the most onerous of which, collection of the Town's taxes, had now been taken over by the Collector of Taxes. Serving of writs and notifying the inhabitants of town meetings were about their only remaining duties, unless some disturbance or crime required them to make an arrest.

The little country town had needed police only upon rare occasions, but as wealth increased and new residents moved out from Boston a requirement arose for a more complete police protection than had existed in the older, less troubled days. In 1865 there is the first mention of an actual police patrol, and three men were employed to some extent as night police. Sometimes the constables were used for this duty, but others also served who had not been elected to that office. Police badges were bought at least as early as 1870, but I do not believe that the men were uniformed at this period. In 1872 there was night police duty carried out for twenty-eight weeks and also some Sunday work. At this time and for many years to come, the Town suffered from three major annoyances, over-exuberant quarry workers staggering back to East Milton and Quincy from Hotel Milton, tramps, and excursionists from Boston who felt that front lawns were excellent places upon which to picnic and throw their trash.

The first full-time policeman, Samuel C. Hebard, appeared in 1874, but

History of Milton

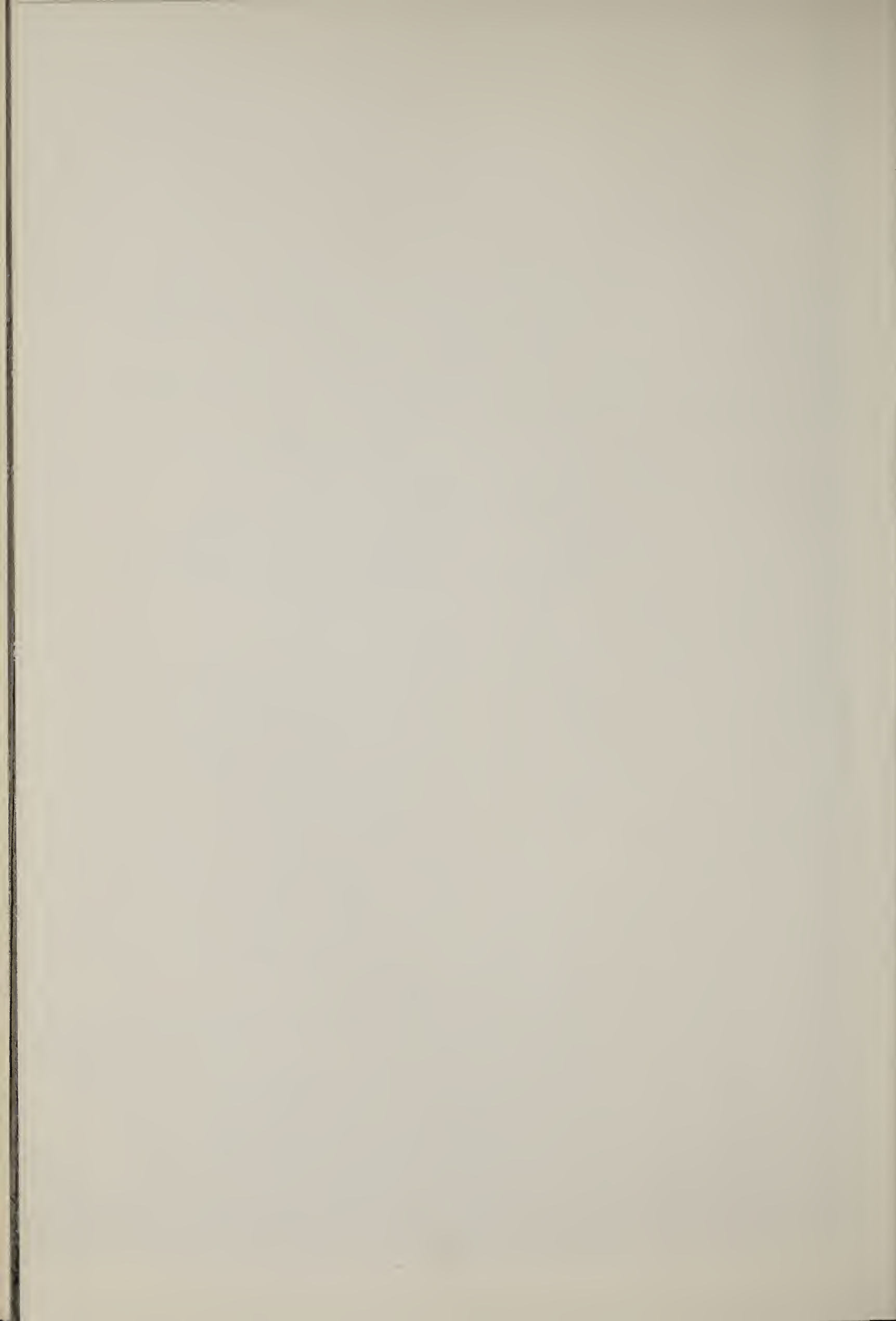
he had been a part-time night patrolman at intervals for the previous eight years. Two years later he was assisted by four part-time officers, one of whom was Maurice Pierce, before long to become Milton's first Chief. In 1880 there were three constables available in the Village, two at East Milton, and four in other parts of the Town. There were also three special policemen. Most of the actual patrolling was done at night only, but three years later we find a policeman covering Adams Street by day. Hitherto Milton had shared a small "lockup" with Dorchester, located in the rear of Walter Baker's present office building, but in 1884 a new brick Police Station was built at the Town Landing in the Village, where the building still stands, used today as a clubhouse. A number of police call boxes were soon installed by the Telephone Company, but they failed to give satisfaction. In 1890 the Police Department was reorganized with Maurice Pierce as Superintendent, a deputy, nine uniformed night patrolmen, and a keeper of the "lockup". At this time there were thirteen police boxes connected to a new private police signal system. The department operated under the control of the Selectmen exactly as it does today.

In August of 1899 the *Milton News* reported that two automobiles had been seen to go down Adams Street over Milton Hill. At that period the speed limit for going with "any beast" was eight miles per hour, and those first two motor cars must either have observed that regulation or have been fortunate enough to escape the eagle eye of Chief Maurice Pierce. The year 1900 brings the report of the first arrest for speeding that I have found, and there could not have been much trouble with motorists, because it was not until 1907 that the Police Department obtained a motorcycle.¹ A Stanley "Steamer" was bought next year for \$1039.99, and Patrolman "Bill" Fallon installed behind its wheel. That year he drove the car 10,300 miles and took ninety-three speeders into Quincy Court. The Stanley would go like the wind as long as the steam in its boiler lasted, but this was not very long at high speed, and Fallon either had to catch his man quickly or not at all. Next year the car was traded in for a more powerful one, presumably with a

1. I have found a record of a Milton policeman chasing a speeding motorist with a horse and buggy, and catching him too!



POLICE DEPARTMENT STANLEY STEAMER, 1912 Chief Maurice Pierce is being chauffeured by Officer Fallon.



The Police

larger boiler. That season Fallon made a hundred and forty-three arrests, and the Town raked in some two thousand dollars in fines. This was too good to last, however, for 1909 was the last year that the State allowed the towns to retain the fines. "Bill" Fallon normally dressed in ordinary clothes and there were whispers that he sometimes egged motorists into a little race before flashing his badge on them.

When Maurice Pierce retired in 1923 after forty-three years of service he left a solid achievement behind him, a modern police force. His service covered the entire transition of a small suburban town, troubled only by petty annoyances, into a bustling community, plagued by four major motor arteries through its midst and traffic problems beyond the wildest imagination of only a relatively few years before.



The Firemen

DR. TEELE says that the first fire-fighting organization in the Town was privately organized by citizens of Neponset Village in 1793. A hand engine was secured of the old type that required filling by buckets. A line of men would be formed between the engine and the nearest source of water, and the leather buckets would be filled and passed from hand to hand, dumped into the engine's tub, and the water finally squirted onto the fire by the force pump. Unless the fire happened to be near the river or a brook, the buckets would probably have to be filled from a well, a most slow and unsatisfactory source. That is all that we know about Milton's first fire company, but fortunately we have quite a little information at a slightly later date.

In 1830 "The Fountain No. 1 Fire Company" was officially recognized by the Selectmen of Milton and Dorchester. This company may have existed earlier, for there is a record of the engine being repaired and converted to a suction type, and there is also a record of a new engine being received at this time. Be that as it may, by 1830 Neponset Village was covered by the "Fountain Company", manned jointly by Milton and Dorchester men. This engine did not have to be filled by buckets, but was able to suck its water from any convenient source.

East Milton Village grew rapidly with the granite business, and in the summer of 1827 a group of inhabitants subscribed money to provide an engine house. Just where and when the "Danube No. 2 Engine" was acquired we do not know, but in 1833 shafts and a harness were provided for it. Two years later the Town voted to furnish this fire company with \$200 worth of equipment.

History of Milton

At this same time the "Alert" engine company was covering the Upper Mills at Mattapan. This company was established as early as 1809. Although located on the Milton side of the Neponset and including one or two Milton citizens this was largely a Dorchester company. Nevertheless our Town contributed to its maintenance, and in 1839 provided a bell for the engine house.

Thus by 1830 we have three fire companies covering the town, the "Fountain" in the Village area, the "Alert" at the Upper Mills, and the "Danube" at East Milton. Just how large an area the first two engines attempted to cover is something which I cannot determine, but the "Danube" was ambitious. Its normal field of operations included the area from Mattapan to Milton Village, along Adams Street to the center of Quincy, then to West Quincy and back to Mattapan, quite a bit of countryside for a hand-drawn tub. For more distant fires a horse was obtained if possible, but this could not always be depended upon, as the animal was sometimes returned to its owner in considerably less than perfect condition. In 1854 the company had to dig down into its pockets for \$37.50 for a horse killed on the way to a fire.

If one thinks of a fire company of this period as being essentially a social organization with some fire-fighting obligations as a side issue, he would not be far wrong. Even today with all our competing thrills and spectacles a fire has a tremendous appeal to all. In those more placid days the opportunity to belong to a congenial group of friends with a clubhouse provided free, and the ever-present hope of a good lively fire to dash to and perhaps to try to fight presented a great appeal to many a man.

While these were essentially private companies they were officially recognized by the Town, which built or paid the rent of their firehouse, a small salary to a steward, and from time to time provided new equipment. Members of the original companies had their poll taxes abated, and later they were paid some \$5 a year, eventually increased to \$10. After a local fire was over refreshments were usually supplied by the Town, hot chocolate, crackers and cheese, but nothing stronger, at least according to the official record. Regular meetings and drills were held, with fines for absences and for not appearing at fires within the areas assigned to the various members.

The Firemen

We have a few brief records about the social activities. On 18 June 1835 the "Fountain" Company went down the harbor on a fishing trip, probably only one of many similar but unrecorded outings. The big event in the history of this company, however, is the great chowder party which it gave in August of 1844 to all the fire companies of the vicinity, No. 6, No. 4, the Milton Hook and Ladder, Engine Company No. 1, and Neponset Company's No. 2 and No. 3. These companies are not otherwise identified, but No. 6 was probably the Roxbury company, an old rival of the "Fountains". The party was held at the Lower Mills, presumably at Vose's Grove, near where Butler Station of the MTA is today, the usual picnic grounds of the period. Some six hundred chowder eaters were present and a fine time was being had by all when some miscreant sneaked in a barrel of hard cider, and things began to get out of hand. The record is discreetly silent beyond the fact that the committee apologized for the resulting fracas and emphatically stated that the hard cider was distinctly not of their providing.

Despite their name, the "Alerts" of Mattapan in midwinter of 1848 suffered the greatest humiliation that was possible for a fire company—their own firehouse and equipment went up in smoke! I imagine that it was many a year before the members of the company heard the end of that. The group remained inactive for a while, for in the following year the "Fountains" invited the ex-"Alerts" to help pull the Village engine at some parade or muster. By 1858 the "Alert" Company was again in operation from a firehouse at the old location, and with three Milton members.

In 1843 the Town had considered the desirability of a firehouse at the Center, but action was not taken. Dr. Teele says that the "90s" Hose Company was formed in 1848 to operate a hose connected with a pump at Webb and Twombly's Mill in the Village, but the mill was not built until about 1850, and the first mention that I can find of the company is in the Town Auditors' report for the year ending February 1859. Two years before this the Town had bought hose for the Webb and Twombly mill pump, and it was probably then that the "90s" started operations. For some unknown reason they did not enjoy the privilege of poll tax abatement which the other companies had received. Perhaps it was because their operations were re-

History of Milton

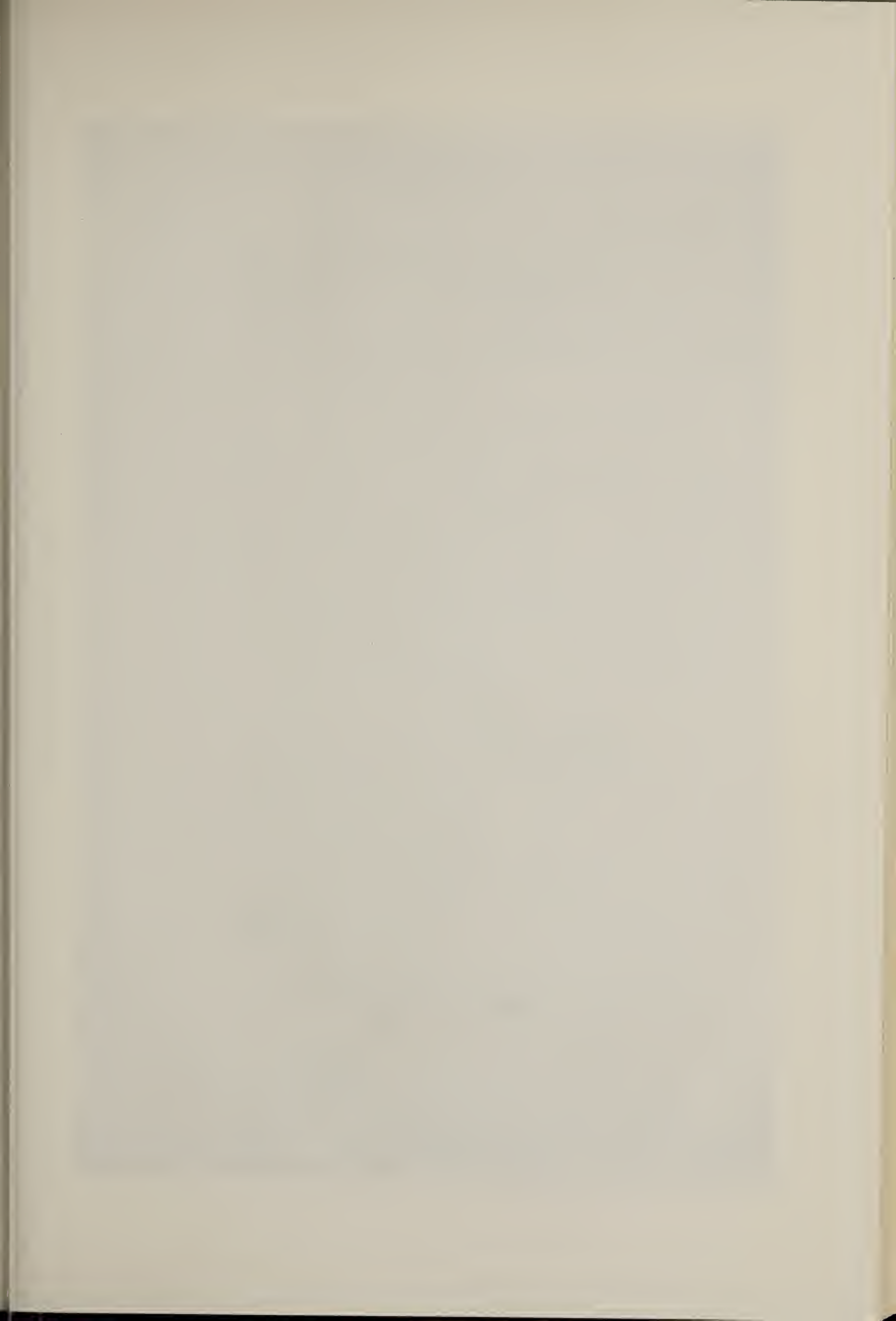
stricted to a very small area, which was also covered by the "Fountain" engine. In 1861 pipe was laid in the Village area, and half a dozen fire hydrants installed, which considerably increased the effectiveness of the "go's".

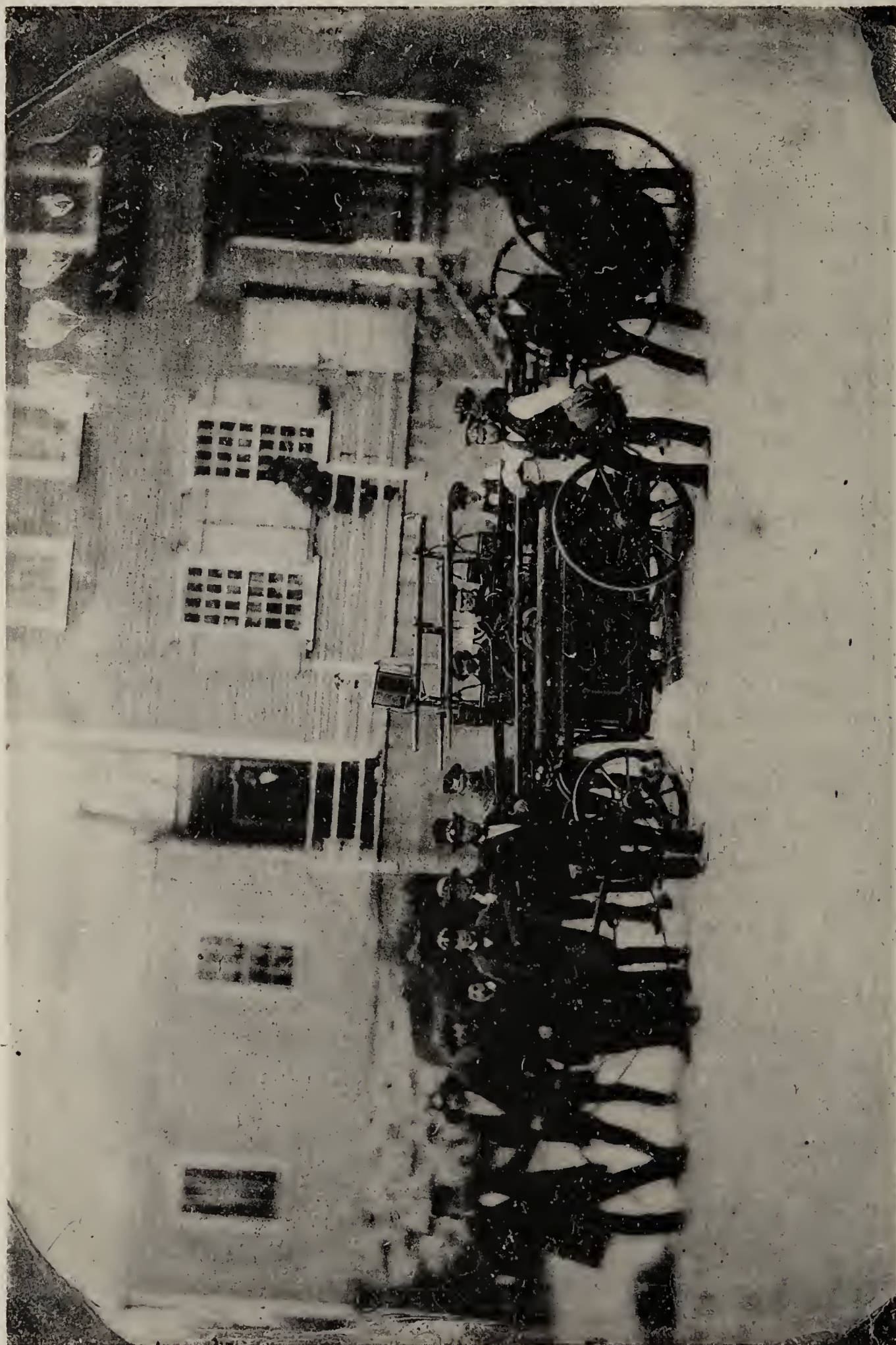
Firewards were authorized by Massachusetts law as early as 1712, but Milton did not elect any until 1794. These officials were supposed to attend all fires, and to have complete charge of fire fighting. They were authorized to require any citizen to obey their orders and to furnish assistance at the fire. Failure to obey them resulted in a heavy fine. On the other hand they had no authority except at a fire, and so had no control over the training of volunteer companies.¹ In 1850 the Town furnished them with "poles", which served as staves of office. They were about an inch and a half thick, six and a half feet long, and painted white except for a foot of black at the top.

Aside from the purely social aspect, these companies engaged in two major activities, competitions and actual fire fighting. There was great rivalry among the various groups, resulting in many challenges and competitions. Each engine consisted of a partially open trough or tank, and a force pump which could draw either from a suction pipe or from the trough. The pump had a pair of opposed arms with long bars at their ends, each of which had room for a dozen or more men. In many cases a fire was so far from a source of water that two or more engines would be placed in series, the first pumping water into the trough of the second engine, which in turn pumped to the fire or to a third engine. The first engine in the series could put the second to shame by pumping water into its trough faster than the second engine could pump it out, thus "washing" it, while the second engine had the opportunity of pumping out of its trough faster than the first engine could fill it, thus "sucking" it. Many a time at a fire there was much more real interest in "washing" and "sucking" than there was in putting out the fire.

The "Fountain" was a famous company, and had rather more than held its own against all comers for many years, but in 1846 it met defeat. In that year the Town bought and turned over to the "Danube" Company of East

1. I was much amused when searching for a list of Firewards' duties in the law library of a prominent Boston law firm, to find them in a volume of old Massachusetts laws which had inscribed on the flyleaf: "Property of the Inhabitants of the Town of Milton"!





FOUNTAIN ENGINE NO. 1, 1858

The Firemen

Milton a brand new modern engine made by W. C. Hunneman and Co., which cost \$1200, and the company's name was at once changed to the "Hydrant Company". At a fire in April of that year over toward Quincy, the old "Fountain" arrived very shorthanded (as well as out of breath), while the brand new "Hydrant" had many replacements. The "Fountain" was "washed" for the first time in its career, and great was the blow to the company's pride.

Within the week the "Hydrant" was challenged by the "Fountain" to a competition, but this was scornfully refused. In August of the following year at a fire at Meeting House Hill in Dorchester, the "Fountain" washed the "Hydrant" for fifteen minutes straight, until its pump finally broke. The "Hydrant" immediately challenged the "Fountain" and this was accepted. The two engines met and had played for about three minutes when the "Fountain" broke its brake beam, the contest ended, and all enjoyed a "collation" at the Railway House provided by the "Hydrant" company. A new contest was arranged for October, with various guest companies invited, the "Vulture" (?) of Quincy, the "Alert" and "Independence" of Dorchester, and the "Button" tub of Roxbury. The two competitors pumped into each other's tubs, and the "Fountain" did it again, "washing" the "Hydrant" very thoroughly! Within a fortnight there was a fire at Crehore's Card Factory, and the "Hydrant" got another "washing" from the Village engine, and this was repeated a year and a half later at the piggery fire at Mattapan. The "Fountain" boys must have had what it took, for their engine was far from the most modern.

The other side of the picture is that of the fire-fighting capabilities of these companies, and I regret to report that the record is pretty pitiful. This was, however, not entirely their fault as it was largely due to the time lag of getting word of a fire, collecting part of the company, arriving at the scene, and then finding a supply of water. Probably all that could reasonably be expected in most cases was to prevent the flames from spreading to other buildings. In a city where distances were short, effective fire fighting could be expected, but in the case of village companies too much could not be accomplished at any distance from the fire house.

History of Milton

At night a company would often turn out upon seeing a glare in the sky. On one occasion a Milton company chased such a will-o'-the-wisp as far as the top of Brush Hill, only to find that the fire was in Dedham. A fairly typical entry in the records of the "Hydrant" Company is: "An alarm . . . was given this evening about nine o'clock. It proved to be the house of —. The tub was promptly on hand and did all the service which the supply of water afforded. The building was destroyed."

Firemen's parades and musters were held upon various occasions. The "Hydrants' " uniform for such appearances was "white shirt, dark pants, and a straw hat". Once in a while the "Hydrant" would lend a helping hand in an unexpected way. In 1861 Thomas Hollis, who then lived in the former Railway House,² wanted his well pumped out. The "Hydrant" company did the job and then was fed by Mr. Hollis. Through some fortunate chance the old "Hydrant" engine has been preserved and still is in the possession of the Town, while all that is left of its rival the "Fountain" is an old daguerreotype of the engine and its crew, which included a large white dog.

The "Granite" Hook and Ladder Company was formed in East Milton in about 1844 in conjunction with the "Hydrant" Company. In 1873 the fire house was moved from Adams and Squantum Streets to a new location on Granite Avenue between Bassett and Antwerp Streets.

For over half a century these private companies were the sole fire department of the Town, controlled to some extent by the Firewards and the Selectmen, but still largely independent social organizations. In 1878 the Board of Fire Engineers was established, with W. S. Leavitt as chief. The companies still had their same equipment and retained their old designations for a few years to come, but the centralized control had begun. In this year two reservoirs, great brick-lined underground cisterns, were built in East Milton, and the following year a third was added, as well as one near the Town Hall of 40,000 gallon capacity. There were in all sixty-four firemen at that period.

2. This stone building was first the tavern of Railway Village, then the Hollis dwelling (hence Hollis Street), then a tavern of somewhat dubious reputation, the Blue Bell, and then toward the end of the century an eminently respectable boardinghouse. The Milton Post Office today occupies the site.

The Firemen

In 1880 it was suddenly realized that the Fire Department had not at all kept up with the growth of the Town, and that we were in fact practically dependent on Boston for any effective protection. Action was soon taken, and in the next year a horse-drawn chemical engine was bought, and manned by a permanent skeleton crew paid by the Town. At the same time telephones were established to warn of fires. The Chemical Engine was installed in a brick firehouse behind the Town Hall, and this was equipped with quick hitching harness for a pair of horses. A separate fire-alarm system was installed the next year, and it soon consisted of twenty-three miles of wire and alarm boxes. In 1883 a reservoir was built at Central Avenue and Ruggles Lane, and the Fire Engineers asked the Town to buy a steam fire engine, saying that the day of the hand pumper was over.

The number of fires was actually very small in those more simple days; in all the year 1882 there were only four calls for Milton fires and six for out-of-town ones. In the days of candles and kerosene lamps many precautions were taken to avoid any chance of fire indoors or out. Too often any fire almost automatically meant the loss of house and barns, even if some of the contents could be saved. Moreover only the men smoked in those days, and the cigarette, responsible today for so many accidental fires, was practically unknown. The advent of signal systems and more effective fire-fighting apparatus has made us very much more careless in our habits.

In 1887 the first steam fire engine was purchased. In summer it was drawn by two horses, while in winter an additional Highway Department pair were stationed at the engine house in case of need. There were now five permanent full-time firemen, and eighty-four call men organized into four companies. Two years later the Brush Hill Water Company laid some seven miles of pipe, and forty-six hydrants were installed in the west part of the town. By 1890 a large part of the entire town had hydrants. The Blue Hill Hose Company was established in this year, with a hose cart in a small building on Canton Avenue near Dollar Lane. The next year's Town Meeting voted to build a new fire station in East Milton Square to house the hose wagon which had replaced the old "Hydrant" hand pumper. The department now consisted of six permanent full-time firemen and forty-seven call men. Vari-

History of Milton

ous changes and improvements followed rapidly over the next few years. In 1896 it was claimed that Milton's Fire Department was equal to or better than that of any other city or town in Massachusetts except Boston. This was probably overdoing it a bit, but there seems to be no doubt that we then had fire-fighting facilities very much above the average of the period for a relatively small town.

The old horse-drawn steam fire engine was one of man's great achievements, and those who have never seen one in action have missed one of the dramatic sights of modern civilization. When the alarm rang, stall doors swung open, the trained horses went to their places in front of the engines without any order or guidance, the harnesses dropped onto their backs and the straps were connected in a moment, next the doors swung open and the engine dashed madly down the road hauled by three matched horses hitched abreast, while the bell clanged loudly and smoke and sparks leapt from the engine stack. It was a sight once seen, never forgotten. Today's motor pumpers with their snarling sirens are but feeble and colorless successors to the steam engines of yesterday. They are, however, much better at putting out fires.

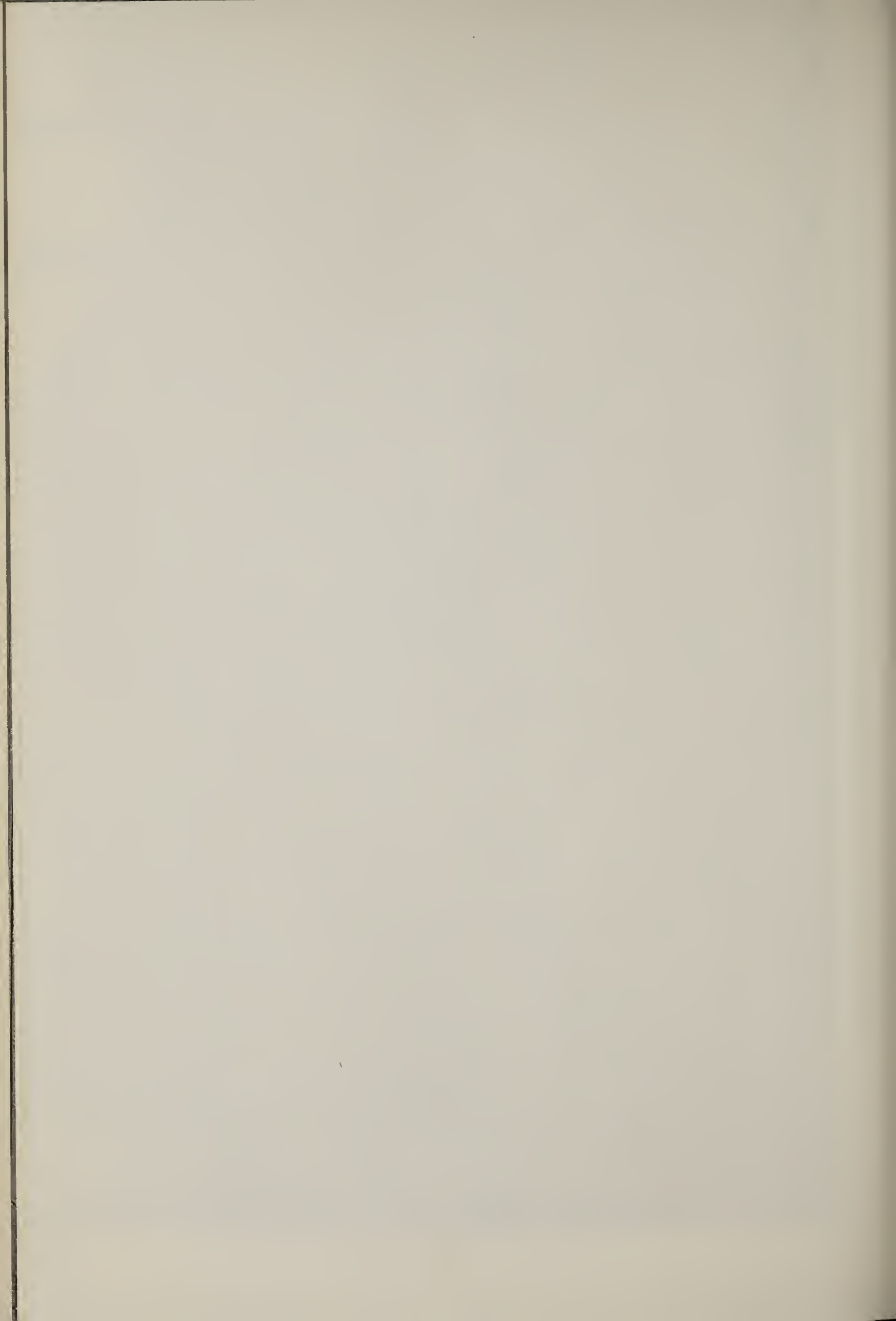
In 1901 a new fire station was built at Blue Hill Avenue and Atherton Street to cover the Brush Hill section. The first automobile, a Pope-Hartford for the Chief, was bought in 1909. It was fitted with hand extinguishers. Considerable thought had been given to the question of purchasing motor fire apparatus, but it was decided to wait for the development of more satisfactory equipment.

In 1911 the old "go's" Hose wagon (Hose No. 3) was installed on Hillside Street near Randolph Avenue, operated by a volunteer company. It had previously been housed in a shed just north of the old brick police station in the Village. Three years later a chemical tank and hose basket was installed on the rear of the Chief's automobile, and Milton now could be said to have its first piece of motor apparatus. In 1915 an American-La France hose and chemical became the Town's first real piece of modern equipment, followed shortly by a new ladder and chemical truck, and a motor pumper. The last horse was retired in 1919.³ The other important change

3. For the next year or two horses were hired for short periods during the winter.

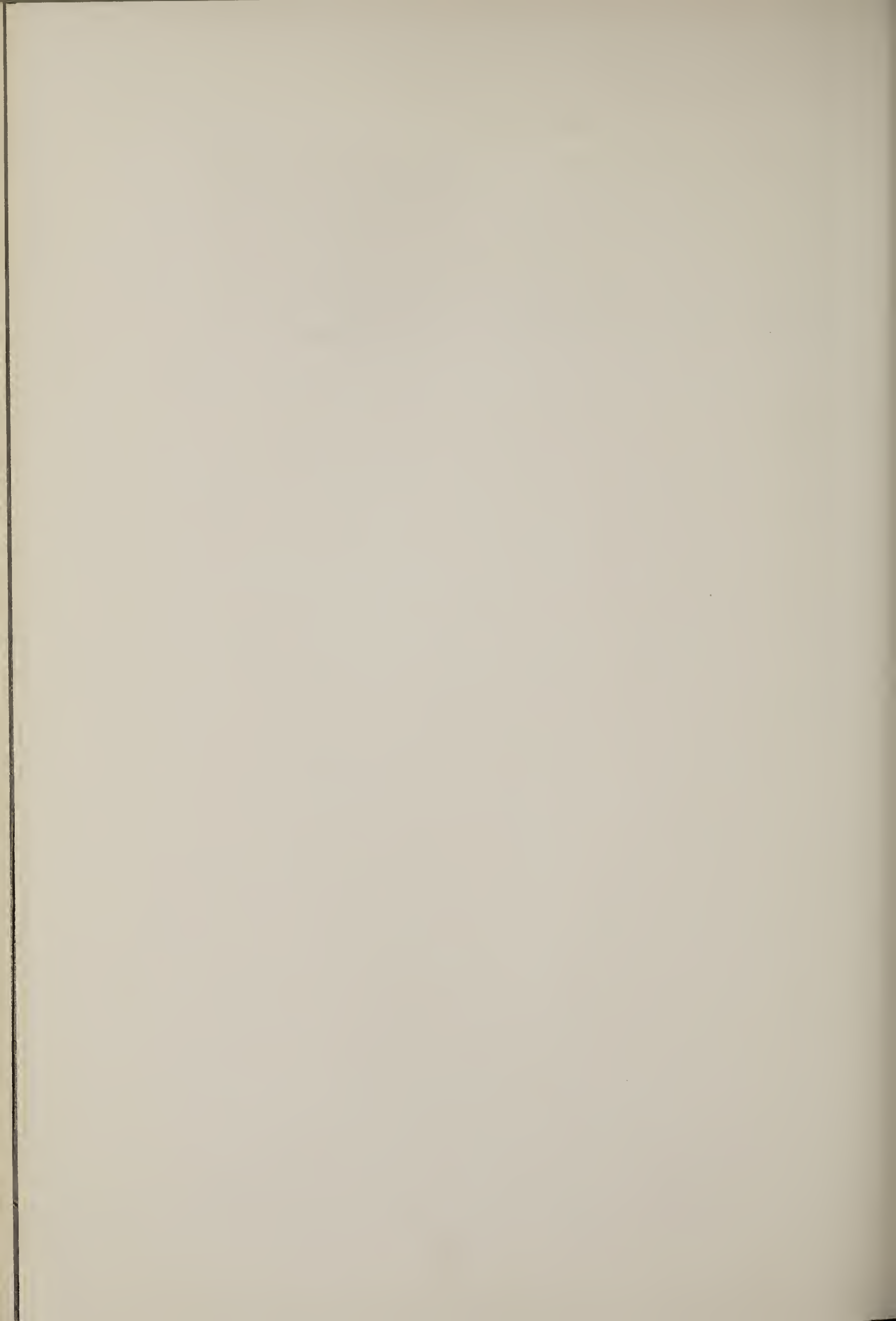


STEAM PUMPER AND HOSE WAGON This was about the last appearance of the old equipment. The horses were hired for the occasion.



The Firemen

that had been taking place was the gradual addition of permanent personnel and the relegation of call men to a more subsidiary and reserve function. The Department had become essentially a full-time professional one, and the transfer from a group of volunteer amateurs was nearing completion. Boards of Fire Engineers appointed by the Selectmen had operated the Department for many years until 1928, when a Chief of the Fire Department took over full control under the direct supervision of the Selectmen.



The Library

THE free public library, supported by public funds, is a relatively new institution. The first in the country was established at Peterborough, New Hampshire, in 1833, while the Boston Public Library commenced operations in 1854. A private circulating library was formed in Milton in 1792. It remained in use for over a quarter century and was succeeded in 1838 by one in Milton Village which served residents of both sides of the river for a generation.

In 1870 Milton voted to form a public library, provided that the Town's appropriation of three thousand dollars was matched by an equal sum raised privately. This was accomplished, and the ground floor of a dwelling house on Wharf Lane in the Village was leased and the library opened in February of 1871. Twelve years later it was moved into the Associates Building where it remained for over twenty years. A reading room was opened in East Milton in 1883, at first on the second floor of Babcock's Store and later in the Ellsworth Building.

A Mattapan reading room appeared in 1901 in a small room in Kidder House, a recreational and civic center organized by Nathaniel T. Kidder on the site where today's Kidder Branch Library stands. The Milton Library has had many friends throughout the years, but none perhaps more faithful and continuous in their interest than Mr. Kidder, who gave both money and services over a period of many years. At about this same time the Russell reading room was opened in a house at the northern end of Hillside Street on the estate of James S. Russell.

In 1902 the Library started a successful experiment—books were delivered

History of Milton

directly to the homes of the citizens by a horse and wagon. This was one of the earliest, if not the earliest, examples in this country of what later came to be called "bookmobile". The horse and wagon continued in use until 1927 when both were demolished by a motor car. A truck replaced the wagon, but the growth in the use of the automobile soon rendered the house-to-house delivery of the bookmobile unnecessary.

Twenty-six citizens of Milton in 1902 bought the land on which the Library now stands and gave it to the Town. The present building was opened to the public in 1904. The Kidder Library at Mattapan was built in 1928, and the East Milton Branch in 1931, both on land given by Mr. Kidder.

The Library is different from most of the other enterprises of the Town in that it possesses certain invested funds of its own, as well as enjoying the income of a trust fund provided for in the will of Nathaniel T. Kidder. Until relatively recent times it also received, why I cannot imagine, all fees paid to the Town for dog licenses.

For those who wish further information on our Library there is available a detailed history written some years ago by Mr. Kidder.

The Wars

IT WAS remarked in an earlier chapter that all troubles with the Indians started outside of the area of Massachusetts Bay. The first of these was the Pequot War of 1637. Our only concern with the punitive expedition sent to the vicinity of the present town of Stonington, Connecticut, is that its "steward", or supply officer, was Richard Collocot, who held the rank of sergeant. He managed to secure at least one Indian slave as the result of the colonists' victory, for we find a letter from Roger Williams to Governor John Winthrop, written in 1637, which says: "I have at present returned Rich. Collicut's Pequot girle . . .".

We do not know what sort of provisions our good sergeant collected for the soldiers, but there is a detailed record of the supplies sent with the later 1645 expedition against the Narragansett Indians, who had been making faces at the Colonists and throwing their weight around a bit unnecessarily. No fighting resulted, and the Indians soon quieted down. Those of us who have eaten Army "C" and "K" rations throughout Europe and the Pacific will be interested in what a soldier was given three hundred years ago. The supplies listed were for two hundred men for an unspecified period, but probably only about a month.

Bread, 10,000 [pounds?]	Wine, "at your pleasure".
Pease, 3 hogsheads	Beare, 1 tun [252 gal.]
Beife, 6 hogsheads [in brine]	Oatmeal, 1 hogshead
Fish, 10 Kintalls [dried and salted]	Flour, 2 hogsheads
Oyle, 10 gallons	Butter, 6 firkins
Vinegar, 1 hogshead	Raisings, 2 barrels

History of Milton

Strongwater, 1 hogshead
[probably brandy]

Sugar, 50 lbs [for sick only]
Salt, 1 hogshead

The bread, which was almost certainly ship's biscuit, and the raisins made a ration that could easily be carried and eaten on the march. The expedition was made in the late summer and some vegetables and corn on the cob were probably added to this basic ration at times, as well as shellfish.

The Colonists from the first days of the settlement were most conscious of the need of defending themselves, and all the able-bodied men were constituted a militia. This was organized in each town into a trainband which was equipped with arms and turned out a specified number of days each year for training. Before many years had gone by the counties were formed, primarily as a means of consolidating the various militia trainbands. The legal militia of the Bay Colony consisted of all able-bodied men between the ages of sixteen and sixty. In 1645, however, it was ordered that all boys from ten to sixteen should be trained in the use of the musket, which in those days might be either a matchlock or a flintlock, the half pike, and the bow and arrow. Powder was always in short supply, and that is probably the reason for the rather surprising inclusion of the bow, as well as the fact that the heavy musket of the period would have been much too heavy for a small boy to manage. It was required to have a barrel at least three and three-quarters feet long, and usually weighed twelve pounds or more.

By 1660 the Colony regulations for the militia were clear and specific. The able-bodied men of each town all served in the town company, which was supposed to have a minimum size of sixty-four, excluding officers. If there were over two hundred militia men in a town, two companies would be formed. Each company elected its own officers, subject to confirmation by the General Court. The trainbands of all the towns in the county constituted the county regiment, the commander of which, the sergeant-major, was elected by the commissioned officers. This was the basic system of selecting militia officers that continued down, at least in nominal form, to quite recent times.

The law as it existed in 1660 required foot soldiers to train eight days a year, and "troopers", or mounted men, six days. All men must possess suit-

The Wars

able arms, except magistrates, ministers, and the officers and students of Harvard College. If one was unable to supply himself with arms, he was to be furnished at the Town's expense. Although required to have arms, deacons, schoolmasters, doctors, masters of ships, and active fishermen were excused from drill, as were, in certain cases, farmers residing beyond a specified distance. Men going to muster had to be carried free by all ferrymen.

While the great majority of the militia men were foot soldiers in the early days, two-thirds musketeers to one-third pikemen in each band, there were also a very few troops of horse which were select organizations. The law of 1672 required that one, or one's father, must have an estate of £100 in order to be eligible for enlistment in a troop, and this of course made the cavalry a *corps d'élite*. Normally each county had one troop.

In 1669 there were three sergeants in Milton, Robert Badcock, William Blake, and Samuel Wadsworth, and two years later Corporal Thomas Vose is mentioned, as well as Corporal Thomas Swift. The last named, however, was at a somewhat later date serving in a troop of horse, and I doubt if he was a member of the Milton band. I can find no record whatsoever of any commissioned officers, and I rather doubt if Milton at that time could raise the sixty-four men required for a company. Perhaps we still served with the Dorchester trainbands and had no separate company of our own.¹ This suspicion is somewhat confirmed by the fact that, when the first draft was made on the towns of Suffolk County for soldiers for King Philip's War, Milton was not included in the towns listed in the call. On the other hand the Town Records of 1670 mention that the trainband and a few others who were present held a quite irregular town meeting, so there was a local band at this time.

King Philip's War burst like a bombshell upon a people who had been at complete peace with the Indians for almost a generation and a half, and as has usually happened in this country, the military were unprepared for the enormous task that developed. The local trainbands of the militia were evidently considered as home guard companies and as sources of obtaining trained men, and not as mobile troops. Drafts were made upon the towns to

1. This seems most probable since it is known that the Stoughton men drilled with the Milton company during the first few years after the settlement of that town.

History of Milton

form bodies of troops to be used on expeditions against the Indians, and the officers were apparently selected by the General Court. There was also at least one volunteer company, commanded by Capt. Samuel Moseley, to whose reputation there still clings a suspicion of former piracy, and whose command was certainly a rowdy and somewhat disreputable one. I mention it because one of the members was a John Holman, and Milton's Thomas Holman had a son of that name. Holman is not included in a list of the soldiers furnished by our Town, but that might easily be explained by the fact that Moseley's company was a volunteer one and thus somewhat irregular. None of these companies were permanent, they were formed for an expedition and dismissed upon completion of their mission. It soon became apparent that mounted troops and pikemen were almost useless against Indians, and it was ordered that all must be armed with carbines and muskets, prepared to serve as foot soldiers.

On the whole Milton furnished relatively few men to the Colony forces, only seventeen or eighteen in all, but two were quite active throughout the war, and one achieved fame by leading his men into an Indian ambush. Capt. Samuel Wadsworth was a prominent citizen of Milton, who had served as Selectman for the five years before the war. He was placed in command of a company raised by a draft in January of 1676, and served with it on various defensive missions along the frontier. His lieutenant was our Thomas Vose, but I find record of no other Milton men. During part of the period this company operated to guard Milton, Braintree, Weymouth, and Hingham. It was disbanded in March and the men reverted to their local trainbands. In April Capt. Wadsworth was in command of another company, which included some soldiers from Roxbury, but about which we lack further information. On 20 April 1676 a large body of Indians attacked Sudbury, and Capt. Wadsworth marched on the following day with his company to lend assistance. While about a mile from Sudbury on the Marlborough road he saw a small party of Indians and rushed to the attack. The Indians retreated into the woods, followed by the Colonists, who suddenly were ambushed by some five hundred Indians. A fighting retreat was made to a nearby hill where a losing battle was kept up until dark. Only some thirteen of

The Wars

the entire company of about fifty managed to escape. Except for Capt. Wadsworth, I do not believe any Milton men were involved, although Lieut. John Sharpe of Roxbury had married a Milton girl, sister of Corp. Thomas Swift. Capt. Wadsworth's son Benjamin, who many years later became president of Harvard, in about 1730 erected a monument over the grave of Wadsworth and his men.

Thomas Swift lived either on Adams Street, near Dudley Lane, or on the latter road, and was a prominent citizen of the Town, having been chosen Selectman each year since 1668. He acted as guardian of the Neponset Indians at Ponkapoag, and in 1675 petitioned the General Court for some reward for his services, stating that he did much of the Indians' business, "they being restrained from commerce with the English, and our English being so redy, many of them, to tacked any advantage against them . . ."

In May of 1676 he was made quartermaster of a troop of horse, but I can find no record of his name in the rosters of the various troops. He was much employed on Colony service, and may have been given this office for the purpose of rank and pay only. In April of this same year, as Corporal Swift, he had been sent to carry a letter from the Massachusetts Council to the Governor of Plymouth, informing him of the disaster at Sudbury and outlining plans for the further use of friendly Indians. The letter also stated that Swift could give further details, and would in turn learn the views of Plymouth. It is evident that our Selectman was well thought of by the Council, and was used as a specialist in Indian affairs.

As far as service of other Milton men in the war is concerned, there is a record that four served in Capt. Isaac Johnson's company along with the soldiers from Roxbury, Dorchester, Braintree, Weymouth, Hingham, and Hull.² Benjamin Crane, then a boy of eighteen, who lived on Adams Street at what is now the Quincy edge of East Milton, was wounded in the Great Swamp Fight, near Kingston, Rhode Island. Capt. Nathaniel Davenport of Boston, but brother-in-law of our Rev. Peter Thacher, was killed in this fight while leading his company in the first assault on a gap in the defenses at one

2. It is interesting to note from the Colony tax assessed in October 1675, that except for Hull, Milton was the poorest, and presumably the smallest of all these towns at this time.

History of Milton

corner of the fort, closed only by a long log, but amply covered by musket fire. Thomas Holman, Selectman and former Town Clerk, served in the Suffolk County troop of horse, while Samuel Gulliver, for some strange reason, was in the Middlesex troop. Altogether there appears to have been a total of eighteen of our townspeople on active duty at one time or another.

Once or twice during the war Milton became practically a frontier town, as parties of savages raided points as near as Quincy (then Braintree) and Weymouth. The loyal Punkapoag Indians in the fall of 1675 built a fort on their reservation, somewhere in the Stoughton-Canton area, which was garrisoned by members of the tribe and by some score of soldiers drawn from the Milton, Dorchester, and Braintree members of the Suffolk Regiment. A list survives of the fifty or sixty soldiers who served at the fort at various times during the spring and summer of 1676. Ponkapoag became a base from which scouting parties ranged the woods from Natick to Weymouth, screening this portion of the frontier against surprise. The exact location of this fort is not known.

There is a most interesting order of the General Court in early 1676 which directed that all able-bodied inhabitants of Milton, who were not already off on military service, must work on the fortifications in the town. If anyone left Milton without specific permission from the Court, he was to be treated as a deserter from the military service. No other record or tradition concerning this has survived, and one would very much like to know what sort of defences were built and where they were. It is apparent that the modern concept of total war and the drafting of both soldiers and civilians alike existed here almost three hundred years ago.

Our Neponset tribe had a hard row to hoe during King Philip's War, as did all the other Christian Indians. In the initial stages of the war a company of fifty-two, drawn from the various villages of the Christian Indians, was formed, but it was soon disbanded and all the Indians confined to their reservations. This was a grave mistake, for many of the blunders of the Colonists could have been averted by the use of friendly Indian scouts. As one can well understand there was much hysterical outcry against all Indians, and it was hard to differentiate between the "praying" Indians (called by

The Wars

some "preying") and the hostile ones. There was great popular clamor which resulted in the Natick and Punkapoag tribes being taken to Deer Island in Boston Harbor for their own protection, but they were largely forced to shift for themselves and spent a miserable winter existing mostly on fish and clams. There were two hundred Natick and three hundred Punkapoag Indians in all confined on the island. In the spring of 1676 the Bay Colony again used some of them as troops and scouts. Capt. Samuel Hunting raised a company of forty which arrived at the Sudbury fight just in time to rescue the survivors, and during the remainder of the War Indian troops were employed to a considerable extent. In May of 1676 the Punkapoags, under the guardianship of Quartermaster Swift, were moved from Deer Island to Brush Hill. They at that time numbered thirty-five men and one hundred forty women and children. Many of the men, of course, were now serving with the Colonial troops. All of the original Christian Indians in the older Indian towns such as Natick and Ponkapoag appear to have remained loyal to a man, but a few of the most recent converts whose towns were farther afield became backsliders and joined Philip.

The captives taken by the Colonists in the closing days of the war furnished a supply of slaves, many of whom were cruelly sold to the West Indies. Our Rev. Peter Thacher secured a housemaid, Peg, from among them. She served him for some forty years.

In 1689 the first of the several French wars broke out, and from then until 1760 there was little quiet on the frontiers of Massachusetts. Even when peace was supposed to exist between England and France, savages from the north, egged on by the French, were apt to descend upon the scattered frontier settlements at almost any time. Milton, of course, was far distant from those frontiers, which in 1689 were at least as far away as Worcester, Grotton, and Dunstable, and so had nothing to fear. King Philip's War had been a struggle for bare survival; the later wars were for the defense of distant frontier towns, and eventually aggressive action against Canada herself. They concerned Milton only indirectly, and while various Milton men went off to these French wars, just as did men from all the other older Bay towns, they were merely Provincial soldiers who happened to live in Milton. There are a

History of Milton

few lists available of officers and men who served on various of the expeditions throughout the next seventy years, but they do not seem to belong to a history of this sort. At best the records are scanty. Thomas Swift, now a lieutenant, was called out again in 1690 to raise a company of sixty Indians for the expedition against Quebec in that year. There is no record as to whether he went with the company, but his son William was lost during this disastrous campaign. There is reason to believe that Capt. Thomas Vose also went; he certainly was commissioned for the purpose. A group of sixteen Milton men went in Capt. John Withington's Dorchester Company, and many of them never returned from that ill-fated expedition.

We may be sure that some of Milton's youth, only too eager for adventure and a chance to leave the drudgery of the plow and the hoe, answered the various calls during the next half century for volunteers to march against raiding Indians or farther afield against Canada. I am sure that some Milton boys went on the great expedition that took Louisburg from the French in 1745, but we do not know who they were. Capt. Thomas Vose, father of Capt. Daniel of the Revolution, and grandson of the Capt. Thomas who had been a lieutenant under Samuel Wadsworth in King Philip's War, led a troop of horse to the relief of Fort William Henry in 1757, but again we do not know who else went with him. There are one or two bits of information, such as the fact that Judge Bent of Milton had commanded a company at Albany in 1755 and had died there, and that there were a number of Milton men in Capt. Nathaniel Blake's company which was raised for the expedition against Crown Point. We may sum the matter up by saying that while few details have come down to us, we may be sure that Milton did its share throughout the period of the French and Indian Wars.

When the news of the Boston Tea Party reached England there was great indignation among the followers of George III and Lord North, and three retaliatory measures, the Boston Port Bill, the "Act for better regulating the Government of Massachusetts Bay", and that which authorized the trial in England of King's officers accused of murder or capital crime, were enacted by Parliament. The Quebec Act, while not directly concerning New England, was an added irritant. The first of these to be passed was the Port Bill,

The Wars

and news of this reached Boston in May of 1774, causing great excitement.

Milton held a Town Meeting on the 27th of June, and chose Capt. David Rawson, Ralph Houghton, Amariah Blake, Oliver Vose, and Deacon Joseph Clapp, as well as Samuel Henshaw, Jr., and Dr. Gardner, as a committee "to consider & determine upon some measures for this Town to come into respecting the scituation of publick affairs, . . .". The meeting was adjourned to the 25th of July when the committee reported back with a resolution which was accepted by the Town, and furthermore it was voted that this resolve should be sent to the Boston Committee of Correspondence. The resolve is lengthy and verbose, but the gist of it is as follows: "We acknowledge George III to be our rightful King, we love our Mother Country, and detest the thought of separation from her. We are willing upon all proper occasions to defend His Majesty, and we are equally ready to defend our liberties to the utmost. We shall oppose any measures which would destroy our liberties. In defiance of the laws of God and Man the British Parliament has attempted to destroy our constitutional rights. We believe that we should oppose such action and we will join in all proper measures against the late cruel and oppressive acts of Parliament. We believe that a non-importation agreement is our best weapon, but we shall adopt such measures as the delegates about to meet in the Continental Congress shall advise." This was a surprisingly outspoken declaration, and the suggestion of possible separation from Great Britain is most unexpected at this time. The idea was certainly being considered by some, but it was still repugnant to most and seldom mentioned in public.

A special Town Meeting held on the second of September voted that the Milton Committee of Correspondence, Capt. David Rawson, Col. William Taylor, Dr. Samuel Gardner, Amariah Blake, and Ralph Houghton should be delegates to the Suffolk County Convention which was to be held four days later. The meeting also took the unusual action of authorizing the Constables and other Town officials to disobey the recent Acts of Parliament. There certainly was no hesitancy in Milton's reply to the "Intolerable Acts". Perhaps as an attempt to avoid the provisions of the act which forbade regular town meetings, the meeting of the 27th of June, which probably first assembled

History of Milton

before the formal announcement of this law reached Boston, was continued by several successive adjournments until finally dissolved on 13 March 1775.

Suffolk County in those days included Boston and all the towns to the south as far as Hingham and Walpole, southwest to the Rhode Island line, and west as far as Medway, and accordingly it was by far the most important single county in all New England. Its thoughts and reactions were a clear indication of those of all this part of North America. The convention of delegates from the various towns of the county met first in mid-August in Stoughton at Doty's tavern, on Canton Avenue just over the Milton line south of Blue Hill, and then adjourned to meet a few days later at the house of Richard Woodward in Dedham. They assembled in Milton on the ninth of September, 1774, for the final session at the house of Daniel Vose, which stood at the corner of Adams Street and Wharf Lane in the Village, where the Associates Building is today. Vose's house still exists in restored form on Canton Avenue just south of Atherton Street.³

The Resolves are believed to have been written by Joseph Warren. Like most documents of the period they were very lengthy and full of noble-sounding but confusing phrases, so much so that a modern reader usually despairs of reading them, and thus misses the fact that the instrument was most outspoken and carried a real bite. In order to make them into a form which I believe to be more useful for the purposes of this history, they are presented here in abbreviated and paraphrased form.

The Suffolk Resolves

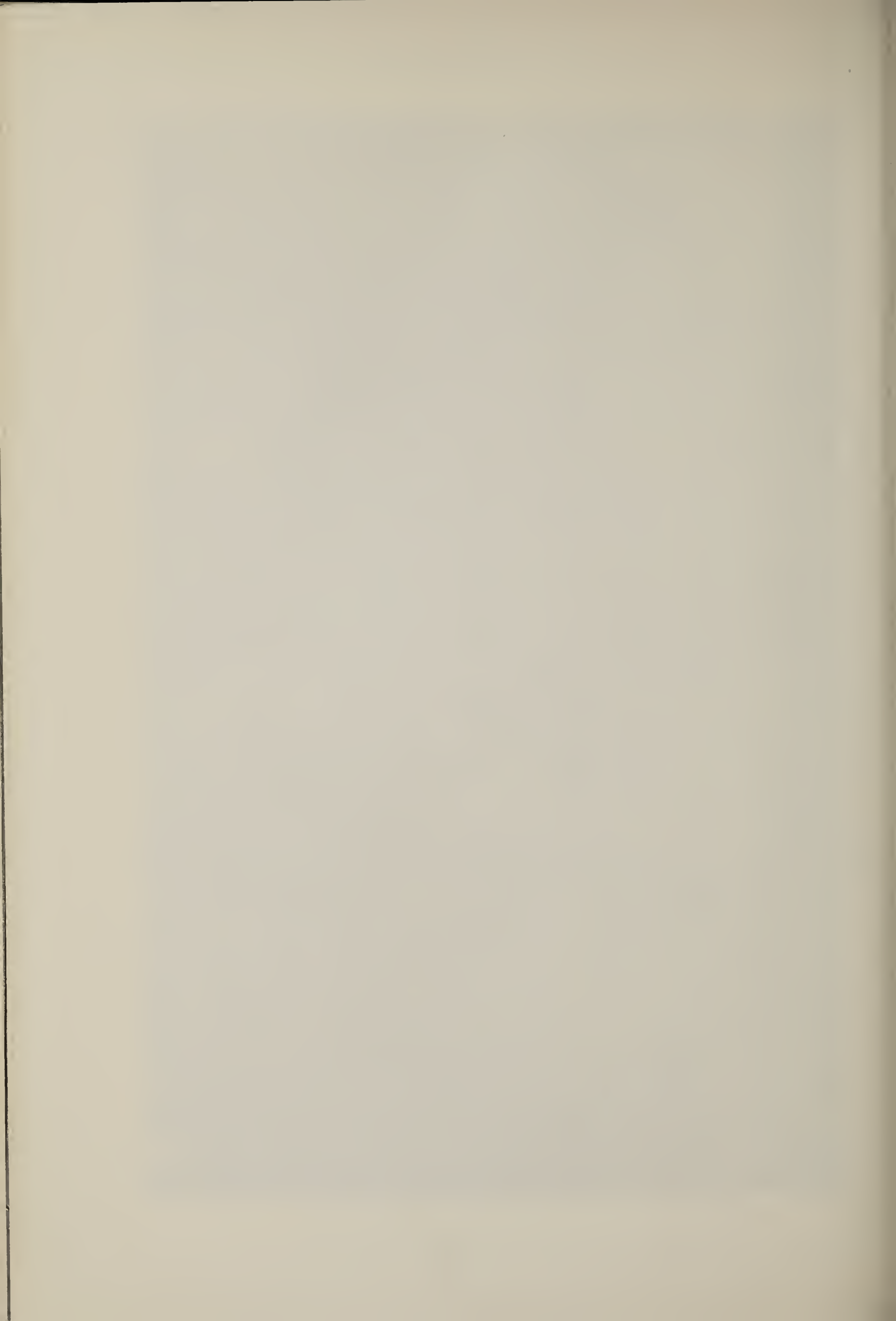
(condensed and paraphrased)

- 1 We acknowledge George III to be our rightful sovereign.
- 2 It is our duty to preserve for posterity those rights and liberties for which our fathers fought and died.

3. The house, then in very dilapidated condition, was saved from destruction by Dr. and Mrs. James B. Ayer in 1950, and moved to Canton Avenue, where it has been very carefully restored and furnished. The building consists of two separate frames joined together, and it is probable that only one half, the northern, constituted Vose's dwelling in 1774. In 1924 grave doubts were cast on the authenticity of this house, but a most careful study has convinced me and many others of the validity of the house's claim. This study is deposited with the Massachusetts Historical Society, where it may be consulted.



THE SUFFOLK RESOLVES HOUSE As it formerly stood in the Village.



The Wars

- 3 The recent Acts of Parliament which closed the port of Boston and altered our form of government are gross infractions of our rights.
- 4 No obedience is due from this Province to any of these acts.
- 5 As long as our judges are appointed in violation of Province law no regard should be paid to them.
- 6 Sheriffs and constables should refuse to execute the orders of such illegally appointed judges. We recommend that all grievances should be settled outside of court. Those refusing to arbitrate their case will be considered as cooperating with the enemy.
- 7 Tax collectors should retain all public monies until a new civil government is formed.
- 8 The members of the Governor's Council appointed under the new laws must publicly resign at once, or be considered enemies of this country.

★ ★ ★

- 11 Take away the commissions from all militia officers who are not friends of Liberty, and replace them with those that can be trusted. All men that are able should drill at least once a week.
- 12 We shall act on the defensive for as long as possible, but no longer.
- 13 If any patriots are arrested, seize officers and officials of the King as hostages.
- 14 We shall not trade with Great Britain or her Colonies until our rights are restored.
- 15 We shall encourage domestic arts and manufactures.
- 16 All towns should select delegates to the Provincial Congress to be held at Concord next month. [An illegal assembly]
- 17 We shall obey the orders of the Continental Congress.
- 18 Avoid riots or disturbances of any sort.
- 19 If the enemy starts any hostilities, notify all the surrounding towns at once in order that assistance may be sent.

The importance of the Suffolk Resolves has perhaps not been sufficiently appreciated, particularly here in Milton, nor has their impact upon the thinking of the Continental Congress been fully realized until recent times. Paul Revere was entrusted with the task of carrying the Resolves to the Con-

History of Milton

gress in Philadelphia, where they were read and formally approved over the protests of two of the more conservative members. One of these, Joseph Galloway, a wealthy Pennsylvanian, who was forced by events, probably much against his wishes, to take the Tory side, stated that the Resolves were tantamount to a declaration of war. They were hardly that, but they certainly were an invitation to revolution.

Milton's own local reaction was sharp and very much to the point. After instructing Capt. Rawson, the delegate to the next General Court, to keep his chin up and trust in the Lord, the Town voted on the third of October to buy bayonets for the two local companies. The 19th of April was still months away, but there cannot be the slightest doubt as to the feelings of the Town. On the 23rd of January in 1775, Town Meeting voted "that every man in this town between the age of 16 & 60 years shall be equipped with arms . . . and shall do military duty in one of the several companies now raised or that may be raised in this Town". At the March meeting it was voted that all men attending the weekly half day of drill from 2 p.m. to 6 p.m. should be paid one shilling, and that the Selectmen should sort the Town's bullets and put them in separate bags according to size.

The records are not clear as to how many companies Milton had on the 19th of April, but there were probably only two. Capt. Ebenezer Tucker's company turned out and marched eight miles toward Concord, and then returned, while Capt. Lemuel Robinson's company was led by Lieut. Daniel Vose as far as the Charles River, where, finding the planks removed from the bridge, they turned around and came home. It was a very inglorious day as far as Milton was concerned.

In May of that year there were three companies in the town, and Ebenezer and Jeremiah Tucker, John Bradley, and Daniel Vose were all listed as captains. Capt. Bradley and Capt. Oliver Vose commanded companies that served for some two weeks in the siege of Boston immediately after the Concord fight, and Capt. Daniel Vose led a company of the "train", as the artillery was then called, part of which served for three months at the siege. As the new Continental Army was formed, these militia companies were relieved from duty and reverted to their normal home guard status, while the

The Wars

burden of the war was taken over by the newly raised troops. As long as the British remained in Boston there were various alarms and excursions in which our local companies took part, but they amounted to very little. Dr. Teele wrote, and I have no reason to doubt him, that the fascines for the fortifications on Dorchester Heights were made here on Brush Hill near the head of Robbins Street, and that James Boies, who operated the paper mills at Mattapan, was in charge of the teams that carried them in from Milton. In connection with fortifying the Heights, militia was called out to assist the Continentals, and Capt. John Bradley's Milton company was one. This, I think, was the last military service in this war of any Milton organization. The war now moved away from Massachusetts, and Milton became simply a home front, concerned with some recruiting and with furnishing assistance to those whose men were away on active service.

There was a most interesting and rather unexpected vote of the Town, passed on the 28th of May, 1776, when Town Meeting resolved to support a declaration of Independence by Congress. Certainly the formal action finally taken in July was no surprise to our citizens.

At irregular periods during the war years the Town was assessed a quota of a certain number of soldiers to serve for a specific period. Volunteers apparently did not spring to arms, as tradition tells us they always did, but were quite reluctant and had to be prodded and encouraged in one way or another. This almost always took the form of a bounty, a sum of money paid by the Town to each man who signed up to serve. Committees were usually appointed and delegated the task of filling the quota. The bounties were apt to be paid on a partly deferred basis to make certain that the soldier served out his full time. On rare occasions an actual draft would be resorted to, but a comparatively small sum (£10 in April 1778) purchased exemption, or one could hire a substitute.⁴ The funds necessary to furnish the bounties

4. "Milton March ye 16 1778

Recd of Cornelius Gulliver the sum of nine pounds Lm which is in full for his being draughted for an expedition for one month if needed for consideration of which I do promise to answer in his room and stead & fulfill his duty in every shape & manner & I do promise to return him his gun & other accutermments at the end of the expedition & if hurt to make them good.

Drury Fairbank"

History of Milton

were assessed on the inhabitants like any other tax. In 1780 the Town paid a bounty of £ 1200 apiece for three-month volunteers, but inflation was then so great that this only represented £ 16 hard money, a fairly material sum in those days, nevertheless. This bounty money was in addition to any State or Continental pay received by the soldier.

In 1777 Milton reckoned up the total cost of the war to the Town up to that date, and voted to assess it, £922. 18s. 8d., against the estates of Tories and all others who had left their estates and were living out of town. This fortunately gives us a list of those officially designated as Tories, and thirteen were named.

Included in the list were Mrs. Belcher, widow of the former Governor, Mrs. Pratt, presumably the widow of Benjamin, who had died in New York as its Chief Justice, Mrs. Foye of Adams Street, ex-Governor Thomas Hutchinson, and Mrs. Dorothy Forbes, who then was living on Brush Hill.⁵ In 1778 the State published a list of Tories who were forever forbidden to return. Governor Thomas Hutchinson headed the long list, but there were no other Milton names included. Apparently what few Tories we had were considered relatively innocuous.

Thomas Hutchinson was unfortunate in the place that has been given him in our history. The propaganda put out by the Boston radicals was so effective that his reputation has ever since suffered great damage, and was distorted into that of a wicked Tory who plotted against his country for his own selfish ends. He was basically a conservative New Englander who dearly loved his country and did what he thought was best for it, but was caught in a chain of circumstances which eventually forced him to take the King's side and to flee to England. He built a country house on Adams Street at the top of Milton Hill in 1743, and had become greatly attached to the town. When his Boston house was sacked and gutted by the mob one night in the summer of 1765, he moved out to Milton, and continued to live here most of the time for as long as he remained in this country. There has long been a tradi-

5. The tax as actually levied most surprisingly included John Adams, John Hancock, and Dr. Glover, who was serving as a surgeon in the Continental Army. The first two of course were non-residents, while the last had most certainly left his estate.

The Wars

tion of a tunnel from the cellar of his house under Adams Street and down to the river. This was supposedly built so that he could escape either from the Indians or from his enemies. The first had not been seen in town for many a long year, and of the others he had none in Milton. It seems most ridiculous to think that he would have ever built such a tunnel, and various changes and excavations over recent years have produced no evidence of any such sort of structure, but the tradition still persists. Hutchinson lived on the best of friendly terms with his Milton neighbors, and is said, upon his final departure for England in June of 1774, to have walked down Milton Hill and across the bridge into Dorchester, shaking hands and saying his farewells to all the local residents before he got into his coach⁶ for the last time. The Town Records in their turn bear witness that Milton thought well of Hutchinson, for in May of 1776, when the Revolution was well under way and feelings were tense, Town Meeting voted to repay to the Governor, through any agent that he might care to designate, the purchase price of his pew in the Meeting House, as well as the cost of its construction. This was certainly an unexpectedly generous action, when one considers the temper of the times. The house on Milton Hill had already been looted of much of its contents, but what remained was auctioned off by the Town, and the house and grounds leased in this same month of May 1776.

In 1779-80 Governor Hutchinson's real estate was sold by Massachusetts. It consisted of forty-three acres in Milton and six houses in Boston, and realized a total of 98,121 inflated pounds. Certain pieces of his furniture have survived. His secretary desk belongs to the Milton Library, while the Milton Historical Society has a very beautiful gilt mirror. He also owned additional land in Rhode Island which was sold by that State in 1780-81.

Dorothy Murray was the daughter of James Murray, who remained a Loyalist and sought refuge with the British after the Concord fight. She had married the Rev. John Forbes, minister at St. Augustine, Florida, but continued to live on the Brush Hill farm, which was left in trust jointly to her and her sister Elizabeth, who was later to marry Edward H. Robbins. Mrs.

6. What would he have thought had he known that a Virginian named Washington would be using this same coach at his Cambridge headquarters the next year?

History of Milton

Forbes, although known by all to be a Loyalist, remained in undisturbed possession of the farm throughout the troubled period. Eventually, well after the war, Judge Robbins bought Mrs. Forbes' half interest in the estate and lived there for the rest of his life. Apparently if a Milton Tory quitted his estate it was sequestered, but if he continued to occupy it and gave no cause for suspicion, he was left in peace, although assessed extra taxes. History has told us of the tight cordon supposed to have been thrown around Boston by the besieging army of Provincials, but some letters of the Murray family give a very different picture. In the spring and summer of 1775 Boston and Milton Murrays met on several occasions at the lines, each party accompanied by a British or American officer to see that nothing improper was said. By the fall of the year regulations had become quite lax, and vessels sailed from Boston up the Neponset on occasions. Mrs. Forbes' aunt, the Loyalist Mrs. Inman of Cambridge, went visiting in Boston, and Mr. Murray made at least one trip out to Brush Hill, while Elizabeth went from Milton to Boston to attend a ball. In the early winter controls were tightened, but interviews were still allowed, and mail appears to have passed freely throughout the entire period of the siege.

During the remaining years of the Revolution the Town continued to be called upon at various times to produce a quota of recruits, and there was usually considerable difficulty in finding them. At times the Town took action to assist the families of absent soldiers, partly by collecting donations and partly by a tax levy. Salt was evidently very scarce, and unsuccessful attempts were made to establish a Town Salt Works, first at Squantum, and failing that on Cape Cod. Times were hard and many of the conveniences of life were lacking, but there is little in the records of Town Meeting to show it, or for that matter to show that a war was going on. The local militia continued to function on the ancient home guard basis that had existed for almost a century and a half.

By July of 1779 the depreciation of the currency had become very serious, and Town Meeting voted to observe the resolutions passed at the State Convention which had just been held at Concord. These were aimed at preventing further inflation, and of course turned out to be just so much wasted ef-

The Wars

fort. In August Milton's citizens met and voted to establish a schedule of maximum prices for a variety of commodities and services. At this time paper money had depreciated to about one-twentieth of its 1775 value, but by early 1781 the Continental currency passed at only one-seventy-fifth of its face value. This of course worked great hardship on many, and tradition tells us of very difficult times here during these years. On the other hand Milton was still an agricultural community, and while many things such as sugar, molasses, tea, and even that essential commodity, rum, may have been lacking, it is certain that nobody starved. Life may have been hard and monotonous but it went on and could not have been too unpleasant, or recruits for the army would not have been so hard to find. By 1780 hard money was again in good supply, partly paid by the French for supplies, and partly from captures made by privateers.

There were two interesting actions taken by the Town during this period of currency depreciation. In the spring of 1780 it was voted to pay the Rev. Mr. Robbins his salary for that year, one-half in hard money and the other half in produce on the old prewar basis, certainly a most fair arrangement, as legally they could have settled on a depreciated basis. The minister, in his turn, could be generous, and he insisted upon returning one-third of the cash and of the produce to the Town. Such treatment of a well-loved clergyman might not surprise one, but the other action of Town Meeting was quite extraordinary and unexpected. In May of 1782 a committee advised and the Town voted that those who owned old obligations of the Town of Milton should have them adjusted and refunded on a hard money basis at the pre-inflation face value. Such unusual and legally unnecessary repayment clearly shows that Milton wished to do the correct and honorable thing, even at a cost as much as eighty times as great as a payment made in the depreciated paper which complied with the letter of the law.

As time went on the Records of Town Meeting refer to the war less and less, but an entry in the spring of 1783 shows that it was not forgotten. In an unforgiving mood the Town voted that the Tories who had left Milton should never be permitted to return. There is nothing I have been able to find which showed that any male Loyalist ever made the attempt, but, un-

History of Milton

less Milton was very different from other New England towns, I am sure that if one had tried he would have been allowed to come back again, and before very many years he would have been forgiven by most, though probably never by all.

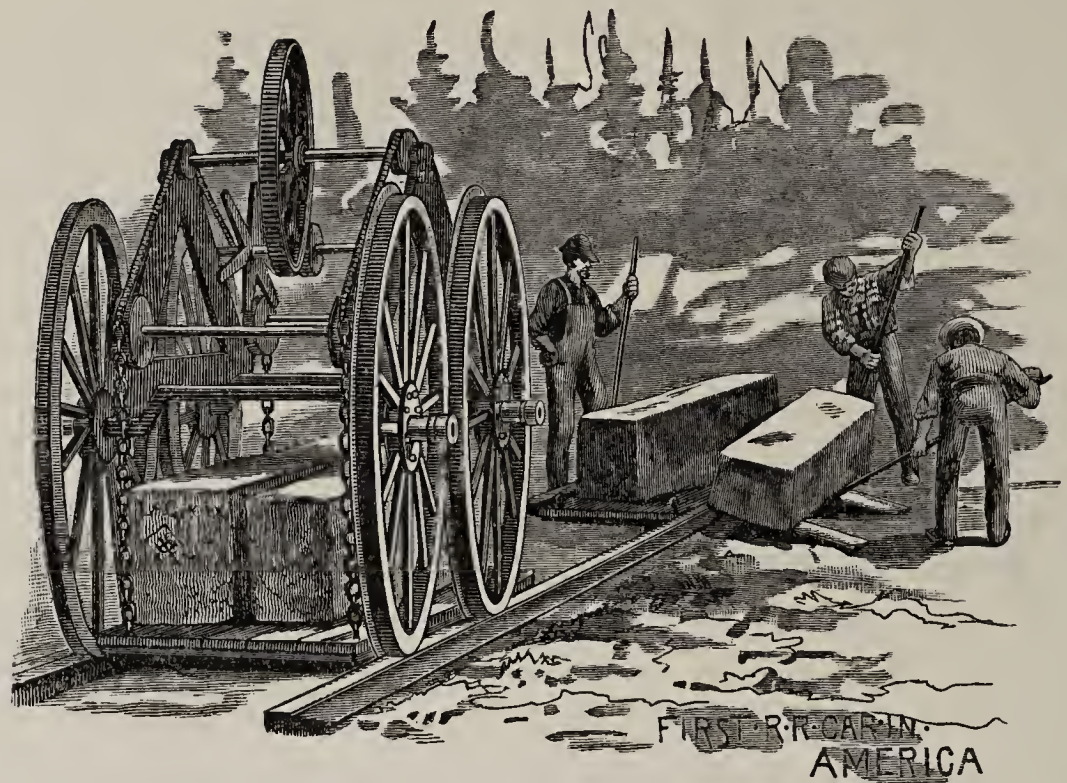
There have been many wars since the Revolution, but they have little direct place in the history of this town. Men from Milton served in all of them, and during the three longest and greatest the rest of the townsfolk did their share with the Sanitary Commission, the Red Cross, and other similar relief organizations. In this we were really no different from hosts of other towns and cities throughout the country, and to recite what was done here would merely be to tell what happened in all other communities. We did our share, and in some ways more than our share, but so did many another town.

First Things

DR. TEELE'S *History of Milton* made sweeping claims of many first things for Milton, grist mill, powder mill, chocolate mill, and slitting mill, as well as a number of other items such as the violoncello, the pianoforte, and the artificial spring leg. Unfortunately further research has shown that our claim of early mills can be upheld only in the case of the powder mill, and, with some reservations, the chocolate mill, since the rest are now known to have existed previously at other places. The first violoncello I can learn nothing about, but I believe that Philadelphia anticipated us in the case of the pianoforte. I hold no brief either for or against the artificial leg which Benjamin Crehore made and then repossessed in default of payment, but its manufacture led to nothing further. In the case of the first railway we have a real and uncontested claim, but it must be shared at least equally with Quincy, where the quarry which caused its construction was situated, and with Boston, which produced the capital to build it. Milton merely happened to be located between the granite quarry and the nearest point on tidewater. The first railway cars made in this country were built here by Willard Felt in his stone shop, which still stands today, fortunately just spared by an access road to the new expressway through East Milton. The building, at the corner of Adams and Squantum Streets, today is used as a residence.

Several of the firsts which can be proved came as the result of no interest or exertion on the part of Milton. Boston capital required water power on the Neponset, or transport through the town, and proceeded to produce the needed facilities on its own initiative. There were, however, two important

History of Milton



firsts which deserve taking up in some detail, since one reflects great credit on the Town, and the other on a citizen of Milton. The smallpox vaccination drive of 1809 was initiated by and within the Town, and was carried out on a legally authorized basis. It was the first organized community health drive to be held on this continent. The Blue Hill Observatory was the work of one man, helped of course by capable assistants, but the whole project was conceived, executed, and financed by a citizen of Milton.

SMALLPOX VACCINATION

Today we think of smallpox as a disease which has practically disappeared from our land, but only a hundred and fifty years ago it was a most dreaded scourge which was feared by all. Fatalities were high, one in six or worse, and those surviving were usually disfigured to an unpleasant extent. The earliest treatise on medicine published in this country was a broadside written by Rev. Thomas Thacher, father of our Rev. Peter, in 1678. It described the then recommended methods of treating smallpox cases.

The practice of inoculation had been exercised in China from very early

First Things



days, and it eventually spread westward to Turkey, and then to England. The Rev. Cotton Mather read of it in the Transactions of the Royal Society, and brought it to the attention of the Boston doctors in 1721, but they were all either indifferent or opposed to the method, with the exception of Dr. Zabdiel Boylston, who inoculated his own son with complete success. There was an epidemic of smallpox raging in Boston at this time, and there was much hysteria among many of the people who believed that inoculation would further spread the disease. Both Cotton Mather and Dr. Boylston were threatened with lynching, and Mather had a bomb thrown into his house, but fortunately it failed to explode. Two hundred and forty-seven people were inoculated by Boylston, and only six of these died.

This new method of securing immunity gradually became accepted before many years had passed. Sometimes a group of congenial souls would form a houseparty in the country, all get inoculated together, and then enjoy a pleasant convalescence in each other's company. There were of course some fatalities, and disfiguration still took place, although usually to a lesser extent than from a regular attack of the disease. Inoculation consisted of infecting the patient with active matter taken from one suffering from the dis-

History of Milton

ease in a mild form. The patient underwent an actual, but usually fairly innocuous, attack of smallpox. By 1800 the fatalities from inoculation were only about one in three thousand. This method was practiced in Milton at least as early as the time of the Revolution with the approval of the Selectmen.

In the last decade of the eighteenth century Dr. Edward Jenner, an English country doctor, discovered that a person who had suffered from a mild disease called cowpox became immune to smallpox, and in 1796 he started his experiments by infecting an eight-year-old boy with cowpox matter taken from a sore on the hand of a dairy maid. His investigations were first reported in a pamphlet published in England in 1798, and in a Boston paper in 1799 through the medium of a letter from Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse of Cambridge, who vaccinated his son the following year. Dr. Waterhouse practiced this new treatment, and soon other doctors in this area were following his lead. Milton's Dr. Amos Holbrook is known to have inoculated with cowpox virus, soon to be called vaccination after the Latin name of the disease, *variola vaccina*, for some years before 1809. The new method of course met with opposition and ridicule, and the number vaccinated in the Boston area during the first years of the last century remained quite small, probably only a few hundred.

A new influence now entered the picture. John Mark Gourgas, a Swiss, lived in England for some twenty years and became much interested in Dr. Jenner's work. His health forced him to leave England, and he came to Milton in 1803. I cannot say whether Dr. Amos Holbrook already was practicing vaccination in Milton, or was encouraged to do so by Gourgas, but he certainly knew of Dr. Waterhouse's work. Gourgas further aroused the doctor's interest, and spread the knowledge of this new medical discovery among other citizens of the town.

Early in the summer of 1809 the threat of a smallpox epidemic appeared in the neighborhood of Boston, and on the eighth of July the Milton Selectmen called a special town meeting "To see if the town will adopt measures for inoculating with the Kine Pock such individuals as have never had the Small Pox". We know nothing about the preliminary work that must have been done to persuade the Selectmen to take this action, or to convince the

First Things

voters of its desirability, but the speed with which the entire affair was approved, organized, and executed shows that it must have been carefully planned and prepared. It is most probable that Dr. Holbrook and Gourgas were the leaders, assisted most ably by Edward H. Robbins.

Town Meeting elected a committee of five, one of which was Gourgas, and authorized it to take such measures as it judged proper, and to report back to the meeting, which was adjourned until the latter part of the following August. The committee immediately secured certificates from several well-known doctors who had been giving vaccinations, had them printed and read and distributed at the Meeting House within a week and a day after the Town Meeting. Four days later vaccination was started at the old East School House near Hutchinson's Field, the people being brought there as the result of an organized drive conducted by a group of volunteer solicitors.

The operation was repeated the next day at the Scotch Woods School House, and the following day at Town Clerk James Foord's house on Brush Hill. Three hundred and thirty-seven people, from two months of age to over seventy, were successfully vaccinated. This represented more than a quarter of Milton's entire population. Most of the others had previously been vaccinated, inoculated, or had had smallpox naturally, and it was believed that there were only some score of persons in the town not then immune to the disease.

Not content with what had been done locally, the Selectmen sought further fields to conquer, and sent out a circular letter to the ministers and selectmen of all the other towns in Norfolk County. This reported Milton's vaccination campaign, encouraged the other towns to follow suit, and offered them a free supply of cowpox virus. Largely and perhaps entirely as the result of this letter some three hundred people were vaccinated in Dorchester, and several other towns called town meetings to consider the matter.

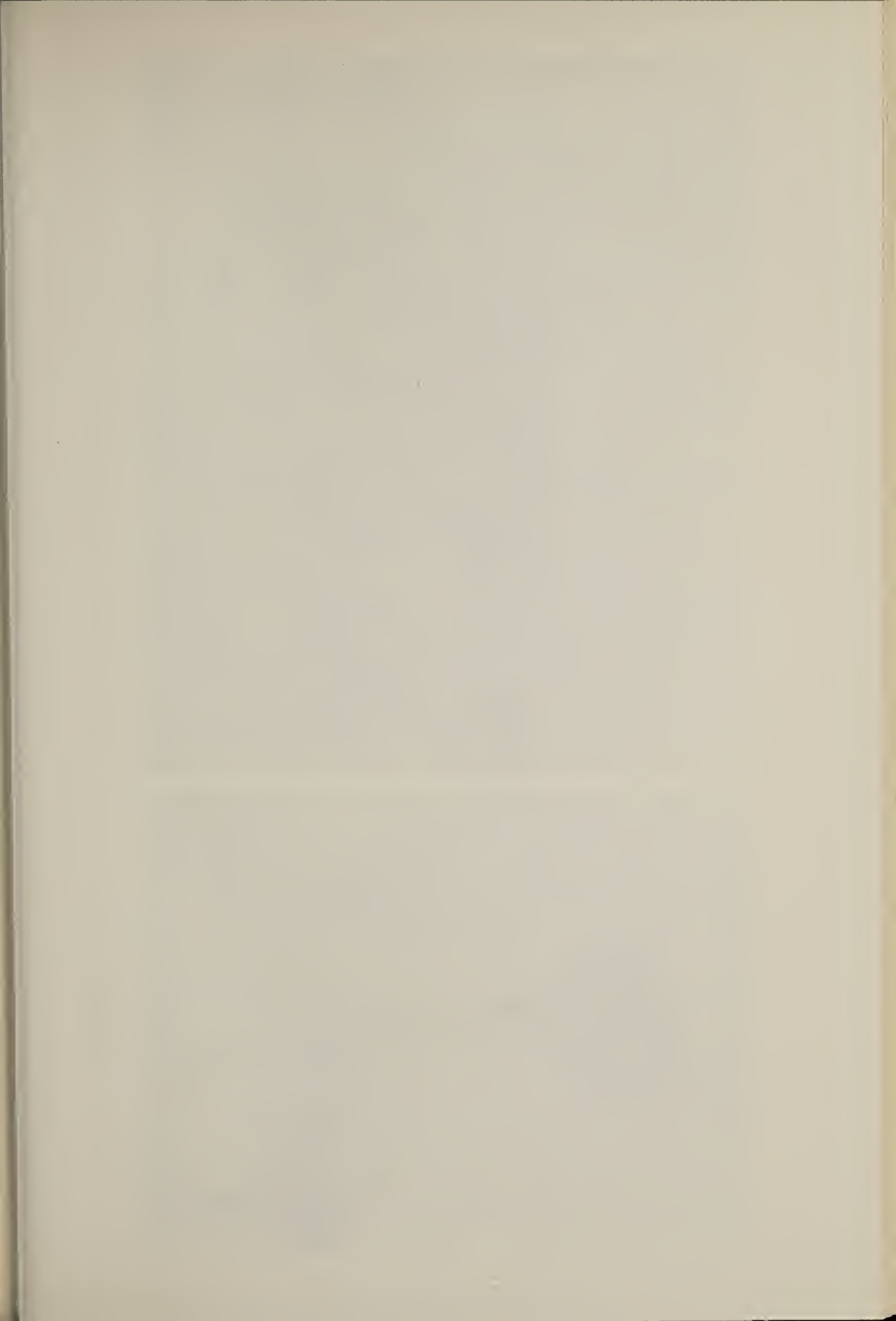
Justifiably pleased with what had been accomplished, our Selectmen next wrote a long letter to Governor Gore, reciting all that had been done, and suggesting that it would be most desirable to establish standing committees in all the towns in the State to make vaccination available on an annual basis. They requested that he, as Governor of Massachusetts, should under-

History of Milton

take the establishment of such an over-all program. No answer was received until a second letter had been sent by the Selectmen in November, when Governor Gore returned a platitudinous reply which said little and side-stepped the issue in a graceful fashion.

Toward the end of August the committee appointed at the July town meeting reported back to the Town on its various actions, and requested that a formal test should now be made of the efficacy of the vaccinations given. A special town meeting was held the next month and the committee directed to carry out such a test. By this time Dorchester, Canton, Stoughton, and Sharon had become interested in the proceedings, and were planning their own local vaccination campaigns. Stephen Horton's house, which stood near the end of today's Horton Place, off Pleasant Street, was rented as a hospital, and the owner was hired as "hospital master". In the presence of various witnesses and a committee from Canton, twelve children who had been vaccinated in July were inoculated with active smallpox virus. The six who are listed in the records of Milton births were from five to eleven years old, with one girl of seventeen. Fifteen days later the same witnesses examined the children and found that none had been infected in the slightest degree. This should not have been very surprising because a similar experiment conducted several years previously by Dr. Waterhouse had shown the same result. Nevertheless, very considerable courage and determination were required to make such a trial on one's own children. On 30 October 1809 Town Meeting voted that there should be an annual vaccination held every June, and that a permanent Committee for Vaccination should be elected yearly. Among the duties of this committee was that of using all its energies and influence in persuading all to be vaccinated, for mandatory vaccination was still far in the future. This committee was continued in existence for many years, until eventually the Board of Health took over its duties. As a final step, the Town, through its representative, introduced a bill into the General Court which provided that vaccination should be made available on an organized basis throughout the State.

Milton's vaccination drive was the first attempt by any community on this continent to better the health of its inhabitants by an organized campaign,





MR. ROTCH AND WEATHER BALLOON
About 1895



PICNIC ON BLUE HILL IN THE GAY NINETIES

First Things

and the State law which resulted from the initiative of our town was the first such ever enacted by a democracy. To my mind a community effort of this sort, which led the way to a better and more healthy life, is much more deserving of credit and praise than is the claim, largely unsubstantiated, I fear, that Benjamin Crehore built the first pianoforte in this country.¹

BLUE HILL OBSERVATORY

Abbott Lawrence Rotch was the son of Benjamin S. Rotch, who had owned a large summer estate in Milton for many years. The younger Rotch graduated from Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1884, and in that same year commenced building the stone observatory on the top of Blue Hill. The new observatory was established in February of the following year as a private laboratory for the study of meteorology, and was operated as such, solely at the expense of Mr. Rotch until his death in 1912, when it was left to Harvard, accompanied by an endowment.

The study of the upper air was still much in its infancy in the 1880's, and there was ample room for a great deal of experiment and research. To a very considerable extent meteorology up until then had been limited to ground observations of temperature, barometric pressure, humidity, and wind direction and velocity. Scientific knowledge of conditions at higher altitudes was, except for observations made in the course of a few balloon ascensions, very nebulous.

Practically no work had been done in this country on the heights and movements of clouds, and very little abroad. By the means of theodolite operators communicating with each other by telephone, Mr. Rotch succeeded in determining the altitude, direction, and velocity of the various types of clouds under different weather conditions. Stratus clouds were found to have an average altitude of perhaps two thousand feet, while cirrus, the highest, ran to about thirty thousand. These studies were carried on here

1. This is not in the least intended to disparage Crehore, who was a very able mechanic. Oddly enough Milton never gave him any credit for his invention of a power loom, which, while eventually supplanted by Lowell's loom, was perhaps the first such machine to operate with any degree of success, and was of far greater importance than pianofortes or artificial legs.

History of Milton

over several years in the 1880's and early 1890's, and constituted a great contribution to the science of meteorology.

Mr. Rotch travelled abroad a great deal, maintaining close contact with scientific progress in Europe. The Observatory was operated in his absence by assistants, the best known of whom was H. Helm Clayton, eventually to become meteorologist. In addition to the many experimental studies carried on at various times, all normal weather observations were continuously recorded and analyzed. At one period the Boston weather forecasts, which were then being made from Washington, were so poor that Mr. Rotch issued his own daily predictions to the Boston newspapers.

The next major study undertaken was the measurement of temperature and humidity in the upper air. Balloons and kites had been used for this purpose at various times and places since as early as 1749, but very little had been accomplished. Benjamin Franklin's well-known experiment with a kite could be called a meteorological one, but it was only an experiment. Work with kites was begun here in 1894 and continued for many years. Mr. W. A. Eddy of New York came here to fly the first kite which carried a registering apparatus made by Mr. Ferguson of the Blue Hill staff. It is of interest to note that in 1895 a photograph was taken of Blue Hill from a kite-borne camera.

The final form of kite used at the Observatory was a development of the Hargrave box kite. It was nine feet high and almost as wide, with a weight of eleven pounds. The clock-driven recording apparatus was largely of aluminum and weighed relatively little. A fine steel piano wire was used for a kite string. It was only three hundredths of an inch in diameter, but had a strength of three hundred pounds. A series of kites was normally used, one or two at the extreme end to carry the recorder, and others spaced at intervals along the line to carry part of its weight. The wire usually ran at an angle of some fifty to sixty degrees with the ground, and much more wire was required than the altitude actually reached. In one experiment, for example, the kites, wire, and instrument weighed one hundred and twelve pounds, reached a height of over two miles, and pulled an average of a hundred and fifty pounds at the Blue Hill end of the wire. It was soon found desirable to

First Things

have a small steam-driven winch with which to pull the kites down. The vicinity of the winch was always an exciting place, even when no thunderstorm was near, for sparks were normally produced whenever the kites were above some seventeen hundred feet. The greatest altitude ever reached here was a little under three miles. The wire broke on numerous occasions, and it then became a problem of recovering the lost kites, which almost always turned up promptly, but not always with the instruments. A lost kite could make real trouble by dragging its steel wire across a transmission line and blowing the circuit.

Blue Hill's most unusual achievement was that of stopping a New Haven train near South Braintree. In February of 1913 a string of kites, carrying three miles of wire, broke away and sailed off into space. They soon came down, however, but with the piano wire strung across the railroad tracks. A locomotive somehow caught the wire around one of its axles, and reeled it up as it went along until the wheel was bound fast and the train slowed to a halt. It must have been a delightful job to have gotten the tough piano wire off the axle.

Mr. Rotch and Mr. Clayton made various balloon ascensions and at times carried on tests with free balloons carrying recording instruments. On account of Milton's proximity to the ocean, sites farther to the west were generally used for points of release. In 1910 six free balloons were let go from Pittsfield in connection with studies on Halley's Comet. Three were recovered, two lost, and the sixth eaten by a cow, which I regret to say was unable to digest it and so was translated to greener pastures. It was not until long after Mr. Rotch's death that the meteorological balloon really came into its own, and this was only made possible by the advent of short-wave radio transmission.

The radiosonde was the name given to the electronic weather reporting balloon in its early days. Various experiments had been made with it in France shortly after the First World War, and slightly later in Germany. In 1935 Blue Hill, in observance of its fiftieth anniversary, started experiments on the radiosonde, and this was the first successful work done in this country. A hydrogen-filled rubber balloon carried a small and very light ra-

History of Milton

dio transmitter connected to a clock-driven temperature and humidity measuring device. A receiver on the ground recorded the transmitted radio impulses on a moving paper chart from which the observations were determined. Probably the major problem that had to be solved was one of cost, since the instrument could seldom be recovered. Ultimately, commercial interests produced a modified design of instrument which was adopted by the Weather Bureau. Today our government releases radiosondes daily in many places, and it gives us in Milton a little feeling of satisfaction to know that the first American ancestor of them all was designed and first released from the top of our Blue Hill.²

The Observatory can look back over more than seventy years of useful life, at some times to merely the humdrum reading of daily observations, but at others to periods of leadership in the development of a young science. Mr. Rotch's work still goes on, and today the Observatory is studying the use of radar in weather forecasting, and is engaged in various special activities for the federal government.

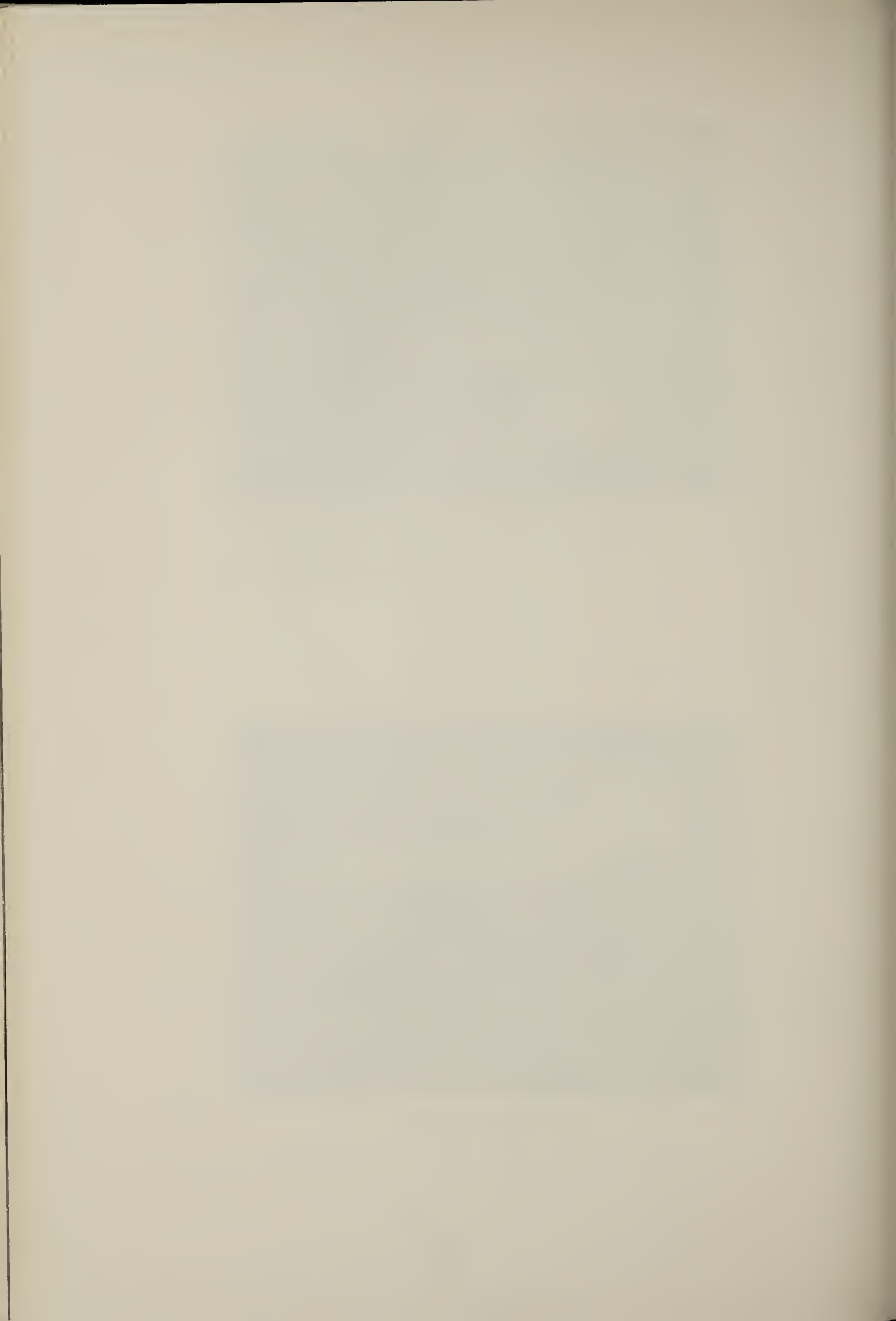
2. I had the privilege of furnishing a little technical assistance in the design of the Blue Hill radiosonde. Some years later the knowledge which I picked up in connection with this work allowed me to help establish on the Italian front in World War II a system of determining high-altitude wind direction and velocity through the use of rubber balloons and radar. Thus work done here in Milton ultimately was to assist in the capture of Rome by the Allies.



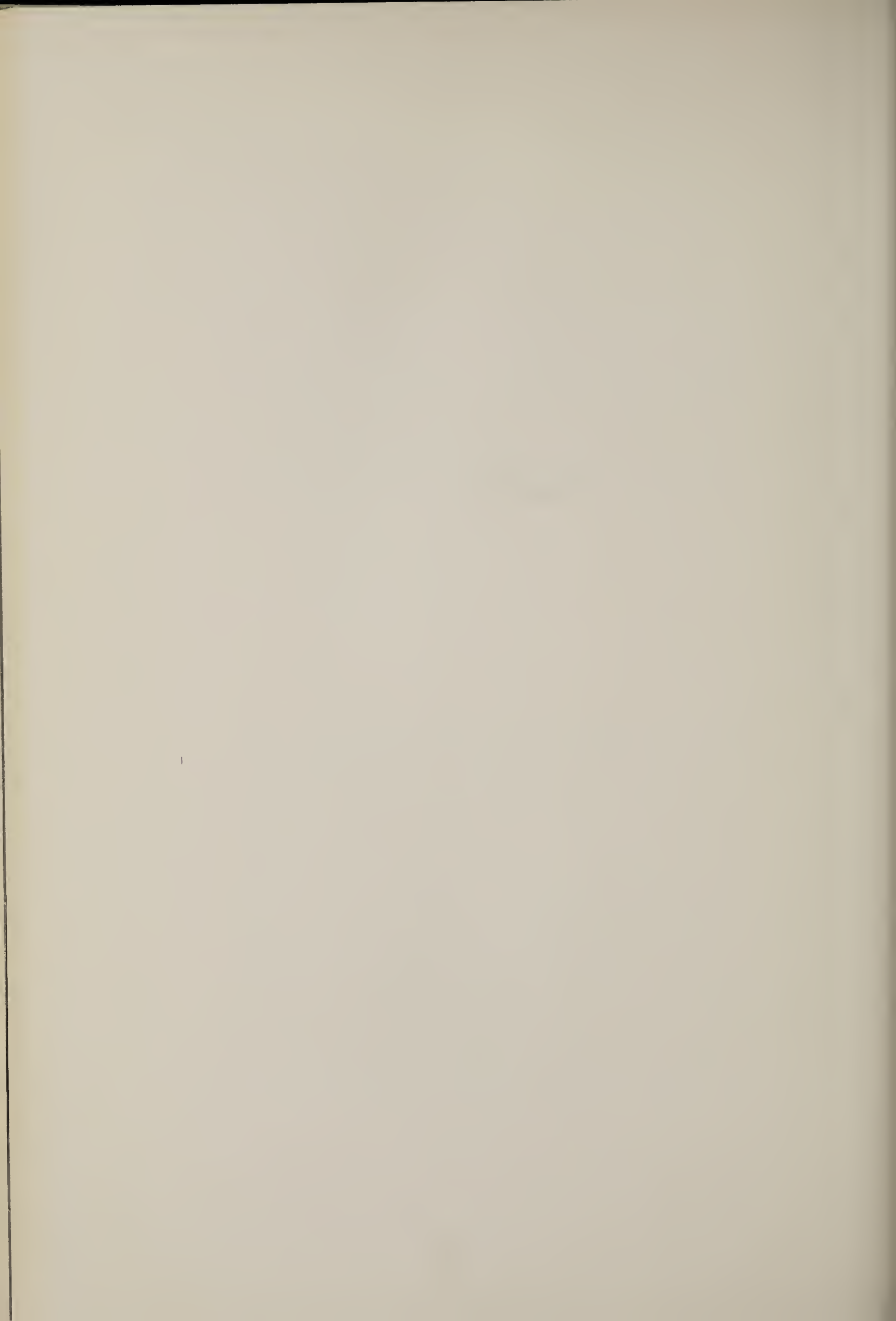
FIRST AIRBORNE RECORDING THERMOMETER, 1894



BLUE HILL RADIOSONDE
About 1936



Appendices



The Possessions of our Ancestors

THE old probate records contain a wealth of material which can assist us in studying the economic and physical conditions under which the early inhabitants of Milton lived and carried on their daily rounds. Often the handwriting is quaint and odd by the standards of today, but it usually is clear, crisp and rather beautiful, particularly in the early records. I have tried to select insofar as possible a poor, an average, and a rich man at several periods in the town's history and to list the possessions of each along with a few notes showing something about the man himself.

Examination of the inventories will give us a fair idea of the household goods and of the living conditions of these people. Most of them were farmers and probably led lives that were not really very different, whether they lived in 1660 or in 1800. I would assume from studying the inventories that the home life and the comforts of the household were much the same, regardless of wealth, and largely irrespective of the period. I do not think, generally speaking, that the size or quality of the houses varied greatly except, perhaps, in the case of the very poor. The dwellings of five of the men still exist, those of the well-to-do farmer of 1682, the well-to-do farmers of 1805 and 1838, the small farmer of 1832, and the wealthy farmer-capitalist of 1838. All are of approximately the same size and general quality of construction. The same sort of physical structure could house a hard-working family in very moderate circumstances or, equally well, a wealthy one living in considerable comfort. The lack of running water, central heating and washing machines was no great hardship when one had servants to bring water and keep the fires going, and a Negro slave for a laundress. Even the moderately

Appendices

well-to-do would usually have at least one servant girl to help out around the house.

The inventories show that, until about the time of the Revolution, excess capital beyond that required for a reasonable existence was invested in land, beasts and, in a very few cases, Negro slaves. Estates not included here show indentured servants, but they could hardly be considered as capital. By the middle of the 1700's money starts to appear, first probably held only temporarily pending investment in more land, but later as capital normally loaned out at interest. Finally, in our farmer-capitalist of 1838, we find investments as we define them today, shares in turnpikes and banks, as well as a large sum out on loans, probably almost solely mortgages. The 1838 capitalist, for that is what he really was, is most interesting because, insofar as I can determine, he represents a capitalist created, not as one might expect from trade or privateering, but from the gradually compounded and pyramided surplus of several generations of thrifty farmers, hoarded, invested in land, loaned out on mortgage and gradually built up into comparatively great wealth. In the next generation the farm land would become of much less importance and the capital would flow, at least partly, into the new factories and railroads which were burgeoning up throughout the land.

NOTE For purposes of simplification and clarity I have somewhat condensed and rephrased these probate records rather than copied them precisely. The often illogical lumping together of many highly unrelated items, such as "5 hogs, a grindstone, sled & wheel cart" was done by the old appraisers. These inventories are presented as material for social studies rather than for the exposition of the somewhat illiterate attempts of our forebears.

Andrew Pitcher, 1660

Suffolk Probate 4-18

Andrew Pitcher was an early inhabitant of the town, but not a very wealthy one. He left most of his estate to his wife and son Nathaniel, who in 1674 jointly paid a tax which was just a bit above the average paid that year (the earliest tax record available) by Milton's 60 taxpayers. It thus should be safe

Appendices

to assume that Andrew came reasonably close to being an average citizen of the town at the time of his death. He lived near the north corner of Thacher Street and Canton Avenue. The total estate is estimated to be equivalent to some \$35,000 today.

This inventory lists the basic implements required for farming and household living, but evidently few of the amenities of life. The one surprising item is that for books, something a farmer of this period would hardly be expected to have. I have examined a very considerable number of other inventories of this general period and almost all of them itemize books (as distinct from Bibles). Milton's early settlers apparently were more literate than we would have expected. The books were almost entirely religious in nature, but I have found reference in the stock of a Boston merchant in 1664 to Montaigne's *Essays*, Plutarch, poetry, a book on "Husbandry" (farming), and even a "book of jests".

Dwelling house, barn, house lot & orchard	£ 100- 0-0	
[?] acres of meadow	12- 0-0	
200 acres of upland & meadow near Medfield	110- 0-0	
4 cows & oxen & 1 horse	33- 0-0	
Small swine	2- 0-0	
1 cart, one share and coulter & chain, axletree	}	3- 0-0
[?] hoops for wheels		
Wedges and rings for a beetle, 2 hoes and [?]		
1 scythe & 1 yoke		
3 beds with furniture	12- 0-0	
Table linen	2- 0-0	
Cloaks	2- 0-0	
Wearing apparel	2-22-0	
Pewter & brass vessels	1- 2-0	
Iron pot & frying pan	6-0	
Wooden vessels & 1 spinning wheel	1- 0-0	
Arms & ammunition	1- 0-0	
Corn	40- 0-0	
Hand saw, pot hangers, bags	11-0	
Books, 3 chests, & box	2- 8-0	
	<hr/>	
	¹ £ 325- 9-0	
Debts	20- 0-0	

1. Total incorrectly carried at £286-8-0 in original.

Appendices

William Salisbury, 1675

Suffolk Probate 5-270

He was an early settler in Milton and lived very near the site of today's Wigglesworth Hall of Milton Academy. Dr. Teele says that he was a shipbuilder, but the inventory shows that he was a farmer. He paid a tax very close to average. In 1653 he had been one of Dorchester's official Town Cowherds. His son in 1685 referred to him as "Captain". The total estate is equivalent to something under \$20,000 today.

Although he paid an average tax, he evidently was not as well-to-do as was Andrew Pitcher, and possessed little beyond the requisites of a reasonably comfortable subsistence.

26 acres land	£65- 0-0
House and barns	30- 0-0
5 cows	12-10-0
2 calves	2- 0-0
2 "horsebeasts"	4- 5-0
10 small swine	4- 0-0
1 bed, 4 sheets, rug, coverlet, 2 blankets, 2 pillows, pillow covers, curtains and bedstead	9- 0-0
1 small "truckell" bed	2-15-0
Cupboard and 2 chairs	1-18-0
2 chests and boxes	14-0
A "chabbin" bed, 2 pillows, sheets, coverlets	3- 0-0
Another little bed	2- 0-0
Table linen	12-0
2 brass kettles, 2 brass skillets, and a warming pan	2-17-0
2 iron pots, 1 iron kettle and old frying pan	1- 1-0
Tongs, pot hangers, pot hooks, fire shovel and gridiron	16-0
Pewter ware	1- 8-0
Earthen ware	6-0
Smoothing iron	2-0
1 bible	5-0
Old table, 2 stools and milking pails, cradle, trays and trenchers	11-0
Spinning wheels	6-0

Appendices

Bolts[?], rings, wedges, axes, spades, hay hook and hand saw	10-0
A pillion	8-0
Horse cart, wheels, harness and one plow	2-10-0
Wooden vessels and a [?]	11-0
Arms	1- 1-0
Hoes	3-0
Cloth or yarn	4-10-0
	£ 154-19-0

Robert Tucker, 1682

Suffolk Probate 9-81

He was a prominent inhabitant of early Milton and a selectman for ten years. Economically he was well above the average. There were about 68 resident taxpayers in town at this time; 9 paid a greater tax than did Tucker, while 58 paid less. He evidently was one of the most prosperous farmers of Milton at this period. I naturally am rather interested in him because he was my seven times great-grandfather. He lived on Brush Hill Road near the head of Robbins Street. His house still stands, but not on its original site. The total estate is equivalent to about \$50,000 today.

Here is a prosperous man with a well-furnished house and considerable provisions on hand. There is a surprisingly large item for books, £2, or almost one cow's worth, evidently a fair little library. The unusual omissions here are a farm cart and agricultural implements. The inventory shows (omitted here) that two of his sons were farming some of his land and the inference is that he had given them all his farm tools. He was about 77 years old when he died.

House, orchard, garden	}	£80- 0-0
41 acres arable land		
1½ acres sowed to rye		
16 acres mowing and pasture		236-15-0
6 acres meadow		
Unimproved land (unknown acreage)		
2 oxen, 6 cows		24- 0-0
2 two year olds, 2 yearlings		5-10-0
1 mare, 9 swine		6- 0-0

Appendices

40 bushels Indian corn, 47 bushels oats	11-14-0
21 bushels barley, 2 bushels rye, 1 bushel beans	4-17-0
5 loads hay	6- 0-0
Apparel	16- 0-0
1 bed, bolsters, pillows, curtains & bedding	9- 0-0
Another feather bed with other beds & bedding	8- 0-0
Table linen & other linen	10- 0-0
20 yds homespun, 1 yd Kersey	3-11-0
Books	2- 0-0
Pewter, brass & tin ware	6- 0-0
Iron pots, kettles, etc.	7- 0-0
Barrel of pork & other provisions	3-12-0
Table, bedsteads, chests, barrels, chairs, wooden ware & small things	5-8-0
	<hr/> £445- 7-0

Reverend Peter Thacher, 1728

Suffolk Probate 26-304

This inventory is included as most interesting, although not at all comparable with any of the others. Mr. Thacher was far from being the wealthiest clergyman of his day, but he almost certainly was the richest man then in Milton, possessing an annual salary equivalent to some \$7500 today in addition to the profits of his considerable farming operations. At the time of his death he lived on the site of today's 15 and 19 Audubon Road. The estate is equivalent to about \$130,000 or so at today's values.

As would be expected in the case of a clergyman this is quite a different inventory, and it is that of a wealthy man. The livestock is numerous and the three slaves quite unusual for the time and place. The library is only what would be expected of a prominent clergyman, but the clock, silver plate, and the pictures show that the amenities of life have appeared. Mr. Thacher is also known to have owned a silver watch, a rare possession in those days.

Debts due estate	8-7-0	
Debts of estate	7-4-4	
3 horses		£ 10- 0-0

Appendices

8 cows & 3 yearlings	40- 0-0
15 sheep & 8 swine	33-18-0
Cart & wheels, trace chains, yoke irons, pitch forks, beetle rings, crow bar, grindstone, etc.	9-18-0
Wearing apparel	20- 0-0
Canes, whips, saddles, etc.	5-15-0
Silver plates, tankards, etc.	86- 0-0
Gold, buttons & rings	15-16-0
Cash & bills of credit	6- 5-1
Cash recd. from sale of oxen	11-10-0
Library	200- 0-0
Pewter	11- 7-6
Brass (vessels), etc.	12-10-0
Iron ware, pots, kettles, candlesticks, steelyards, andirons & spits	7-16-0
Beds & furniture	64-14-0
Clock	4- 0-0
Chest of drawers, lanterns, pictures	14- 9-0
"His chair of ease", other chairs & tables	8-17-0
Lignum vitae mortar, "stillard" [steelyard?]	1- 6-4
Frying pan, physical [medical] vials, pots & drugs	1-19-0
Trunks, boxes, money scales, looking glass, combs, brush, razors, hone	1- 8-0
Meat tubs, casks, jars, bellows, hammers, sickles	3-17-0
Spinning wheels, churn, smoothing irons, lumber, sheepskins & calves' skins	6- 9-6
Cards, wine[?], knives & forks	16-0
Negro boys Sambo & Jemmy	120- 0-0
Negro girl Hager	55- 0-0
Dwelling house, land & appurtenances	800- 0-0
Dorchester land 150 acres	150- 0-0
Mr Trowbridge's wright	25- 0-0
	<hr/>
	£1728-13-7
"Barrel of a gun since come to light"	2- 0-0

Appendices

Ebenezer Badcock, 1761

Suffolk Probate 58-139

I can learn nothing about him except that he was born in either 1699 or 1715 and lived somewhere near the Village. He certainly was very low down on the economic ladder. The total is equivalent to perhaps \$200 today.

Wearing apparel	£ 4-0
Old iron and a chest	1-8
His mansion house	3- 0-0
	<u>£3- 5-8</u>

Henry Crane, 1760

Suffolk Probate 58-28

He was a carpenter, living somewhere in the eastern portion of the town, and paid a tax that was well below the average. The total estate is in the order of about \$6000 today.

Crane evidently was not blessed with too much of this world's goods and appears to have shared a house with a brother or sister. A cow, a pig, and a little farming on the side presumably furnished a part of his subsistence.

Wearing apparel	£3-13-8
2 beds, bedding, bedsteads and cord	6- 4-0
Pewter, iron pots and kettle	1- 0-8
Andirons, fire slice and tongs, trammels	14-8
Carpenter's tools, pair of flat irons, gun and ammunition	1-17-7
Looking glass, 10 glass bottles, case knives and forks	9-4
Oval table, 3 chests, 12 chairs and 2 spinning wheels	13-1
Suit of curtains, 2 bibles, 2 pamphlets	16-0
Earthen, tin and wooden ware with sundry small things	4-5
A cow and swine	3- 8-0
His half of mansion house and barn	36-13-4
His half of homestead	22- 0-0
Interest in his mother's estate	10- 8-9
	<u>£88- 3-6</u>

Appendices

Captain Thomas Vose, 1760

Mss in possession Milton Historical Society

Captain Vose was a man of standing in Milton, and captain of a troop of horse, but he was far from being one of the richest. The town tax list for 1759 shows that there were 36 taxpayers who paid a greater combined real estate and personal tax than did Captain Thomas, and 126 who paid less. He was the father of Captain Daniel Vose and my own four times great-grandfather, so I am particularly interested in him both as a person and as typifying the more prosperous Milton farmer of the period. He lived on the northwest side of Canton Avenue a little south of Atherton Street. The total value of the estate was equivalent to some \$80,000 today.

Captain Vose was evidently in very comfortable circumstances. Here for the first time we find a means of transport other than horseback or farm cart, indicative of increasing comfort as well as better roads. The most unusual item is the repeating watch, one which struck the hours and quarters on a bell when its pendant was pushed in. This is an item of great luxury and one not expected even of a wealthy farmer at this period. Possibly it was plunder secured on one of his military expeditions.

Province notes	£213- 5-9
Cash	11- 4-0
Clothing	12- 9-0
Silver repeating watch	6-13-4
Military equipment	7- 8-8
Household furniture & furnishings	51-17-5
Four oxen	24- 0-0
One horse	5- 6-8
Eight cows and a heifer	38-18-8
Two calves	1- 2-2
Two swine	2- 0-0
Four pigs	1- 4-0
Dunghill fowl	6-0
Three hives of bees	1- 9-0
Riding chair, Harness & saddles	10-12-0
Cart, spare wheels and sleds	4-18-0
Plows, chains, etc.	3-3-10
Tools	4-18-0

Appendices

Cider press	2- 0-0
Wood, planks, wool, leather, bar iron, etc.	20- 1-6
House	53- 6-8
Barn & shop	17- 6-8
Orchard	13- 6-8
111 Acres of land	605- 9-4
	<hr/> £ 1112- 7-4

The above is condensed from a somewhat illegible MS copy owned by the Milton Historical Society. The inventory actually entered in the record book of the Suffolk Probate Court (Book 57, p. 136) is somewhat more detailed and gives a total value of £ 1104-13-3. It lists a number of interesting items not shown above.

- A set of worked curtains, valance head cloth, & curtain rods.
- A great chair and cushion, a desk, chest of drawers and a looking glass. A steel trap, a large bible included with about £2 worth of books.
- A plow and plow irons and new shear mold.
- Pitch fork, dung fork, and hay hook, narrow axes, broad axes, hatchets, a beetle and 3 wedges and peat irons.
- Carpenter's tools and grindstone.

Samuel Miller, Esq., 1761

Suffolk 58-376

He was the second richest man in Milton at this period, Andrew Belcher, son of the late Governor, paying a tax almost fifty per cent greater than he did. Miller was a prominent man, a Justice of the Peace, and holder of many town offices. He lived near the northwest corner of Hillside and Randolph Avenue on the site of today's 11 Hillside Street. The total value of the estate was equivalent to about \$400,000 today.

Large holdings of land, some 900 acres in all, represent the real capital of this wealthy man, but I believe that he also had some money loaned out on mortgages. The five Negro slaves put him in a special category almost by himself, although at this date there were nine other slaves owned in town. He almost certainly farmed some of his land with slaves and hired hands, and probably leased part of the remainder. Relative to the rest of the town and the period Miller was the richest man of all those whose inventories are

Appendices

here included. His father had long operated a famous and prosperous tavern on Adams Street near Dudley Lane and that was probably the source of at least some of this wealth. The Reverend Ebenezer Miller, D.D., Anglican minister in Braintree, was his brother.

Homestead farm with buildings 227 acres	2016- 0-0
677 ³ / ₄ acres other lands	2732- 0-0
Negro men Ceasor & Robin	[left blank]
Negro man Berry	33- 6-8
1 Negro woman and child	34- 0-0
3 mares	19- 5-4
3 yoke oxen and a fat ox	38-13-4
9 cows, yoke of steers, 6 three year olds	65- 6-8
6 calves, 5 sheep	37- 0-0
5 hogs, a grindstone, sled & wheel cart	9- 4-0
Old cart wheel, 2 horse plows & one large plow	2- 6-0
4 large chairs, 2 pairs [?] for cart	5-16-4
2 sled chains, a pair horse traces, pair harness	1- 0-0
Broadwheel cart, 4 yokes, 2 dung forks	2-16-0
Chair body, 2 horse saddles, iron foot	2- 6-0
2 iron bars, cider mill & press, horse collar	4-18-8
6 cart hoops, 2 cart "stirips"	1- 0-0
Broken iron, farm tools, etc.	1-12-0
3 hay forks, 3 narrow & 1 small broadaxe	1- 5-4
2 post axes, 2 adses, 2 augers, saw, iron square	1- 6-0
Bench hook, 2 cow bells, sled, broken chains	1- 4-0
20 ounces silver, silver hilted sword	9-13-4
Blue great coat, blue roqueleau [long cloak]	5-14-8
Cloth colored coat, blue coat, breeches & waistcoat	6- 0-0
Red baize gown & waistcoat, camlet jacket	2-13-4
Red ratteen coat with silver buttons	2- 8-0
5 shirts, 4 stocks, 3 caps	1-10-8
Books on law & divinity	5- 3-4
12 skeins worsted	3- 1-4
yarn, wool & a gun	2-14-8
2½ barrels pork	6-18-8
1 barrel beef, 7 bushels potatoes	3- 6-8
8 bushels turnips, 189 pounds cheese	3-15-7

Appendices

30 pounds lard, $\frac{3}{4}$ barrel soap	19-4
3 pipe hogsheads, 7 hogsheads	2- 4-0
3 barrels, 4 meat tubs	1-16-0
60 bushels corn	8- 0-0
18 bushels oats, 12 tons hay	25-16-0
Blunderbus, 33 barrels cider	13-10-0
3 tons salt hay, $3\frac{1}{2}$ bushels flax seed	3-10-6
60 pounds flax, 3 ox hides	2-13-4
4 beds	29- 6-8
6 turkey chairs, 6 chairs	6- 0-0
4 leather chairs, 4 black chairs	1-11-8
2 great chairs, 1 cane chair, 2 joint stools	1-12-8
Large black walnut table & one small one	6-13-4
Large maple table & one small one	3- 4-0
2 looking glasses, case of drawers	10- 4-0
Case of drawers, bureau table, small case of drawers	6- 8-0
"Vanicerd" desk, couch, "Vaniverd" table	5- 9-4
Tea table, time piece, clothes horse	4-18-8
2 iron pots & iron kettles, 4 trammels	1-12-8
1 spit, large brass kettle & a small one	1-16-0
Small pot & skillet, bell metal skillet	1- 0-8
Frying pan, dripping pan & fender	1- 3-4
Fire shovel & tongs, andirons, gridiron	15-10
Lignum vitae mortar, copper coffee pot	1- 4-0
Warming pan, toast iron, trivet	8-0
2 brass candlesticks, pair andirons	1- 7-4
12 plates, 5 dishes	2- 8-0
Funnel, coffee pot, chopping knife, tea pot, snuffers, flesh fork, lamp, scales & weights	17-4
Flat iron, standing candlestick, tongs	1-12-8
Andirons, steel yard, small mortar	19-2
Old chest, table cloth, 5 towels	14-8
"Pillowbears", 6 towels, foot [spinning] wheel	1- 4-0
Reel, great [spinning] wheel, loom	1-7-10
Cheese press, meal chest, table	12-0
2 churns, cheese tub, 7 trays	8-6
	<hr/> £5216-15-5

Appendices

A 1761 census of the town reported £5 148 money out at interest. One may be certain that some, and probably quite a lot, of this belonged to Samuel Miller, although not included in this inventory. Also he must have had a watch.

Beza Thayer, Yeoman, 1812

Norfolk Probate 17,953

He lived on Hillside Street. The total net value of the estate is equivalent to about \$18,000 today, although in the final settlement actual insolvency was approached.

Here is a farmer, evidently not overprosperous, yet comfortably situated. The silver spoons are interesting, and it would appear that he did a little cobbling on the side, but perhaps only for his own family.

Homestead 11¾ acres with buildings	\$1296.00
45 acres land	1800.00
Horse, 3 cows, a swine	108.00
Chaise, market carriage, and horse cart	52.00
Clock, card table, 3 tables	34.00
6 best chairs, 12 kitchen chairs, crockery ware	17.50
Brass andirons, 2 sets shovel & tongs, 2 pair iron andirons	11.50
9 silver spoons, a block tin teapot	12.50
Brass kettle, iron ware, cheese press	10.00
4 feather beds	32.00
3 bedsteads, 7 pair sheets, 6 bed quilts	31.00
Desk, looking glass, candlestick	5.00
Earthen & tin ware, 30 fruit boxes	3.50
Half bushel & other measures, 2 tubs, churn, 3 pails	3.50
1 large & 2 small spinning wheels, gun	9.00
Shoemaker's seat & tools, leather	6.50
Steel trap, box of old iron	2.50
Iron bar, shovel, dung fork	4.00
	<hr/> \$3438.50
Debts	2185.05
Net value of estate	<hr/> \$1253.45

Appendices

Timothy Tucker, Gentleman, 1805

Norfolk Probate 18,831

Timothy, or perhaps his family, appears to have had ideas of his standing in the world, but he really was only a prosperous farmer. He lived on Brush Hill Road at the northeast corner of Williams Road in the house still standing there. This estate would be equivalent to something well over \$100,000 today. There is nothing very unusual in the list, but for the first time we find an entry of money loaned out at interest. A farmer has reached the point where he has some surplus capital on hand. Fifty-seven citizens paid a tax in 1803 which was greater than his, and two hundred and twenty-seven one which was less. Two taxpayers had to pay six times what Timothy did, and one, Edward H. Robbins, sixteen times.

Homestead 70 acres with buildings	\$3500.00
22 acres of land with right in house thereon	1650.00
Undivided right in 12 acres woodland & 5½ acres salt marsh	588.50
68 acres salt marsh, meadows and woodland (part in Canton)	2299.00
Pew in Meeting House in Milton	140.00
Half of stable No 12. back of Meeting House	10.00
Watch, chest of drawers	19.00
Large table, tea table	4.50
Chest with drawer, meal chest	3.50
7 chairs, bellows, bread trough	3.83
4 beds with bedding	82.00
6 pair sheets, table linen & towels	8.00
Cheese tub, 2 churns, tray & cheese hoops	5.00
Cheese press & basket, 10 milk pans	4.16
2 tin pails, 3 pans & other tin ware	4.49
Brown earthen ware crockery & glass ware	5.00
Pewter ware, brass kettle, 4 brass candlesticks	11.50
2 iron pots, 1 iron kettle, spider & tea kettle	4.25
Bake kettle, skillet, flat irons	2.25
Pair large andirons, pair small ones	4.00
Shovel & tongs, grid iron & toaster	2.00
Crane, trammels & hooks	3.00
1 yoke oxen	90.00

Appendices

5 cows	119.00
1 heifer	11.00
1 hog	13.00
34 hundredweight English hay	34.40
30 hundredweight salt & fresh hay	16.50
5 hundredweight corn fodder	4.25
16 bushels corn	20.00
3½ bushels barley	3.50
Potatoes, 3½ barrels cider	10.75
150 lbs. pork	18.00
100 lbs. cheese	12.00
8 lbs. butter	2.00
6 lbs. lard	1.00
1 beef tub with beef	2.00
3 hogsheads & 1 barrel	6.00
1 wagon	50.00
Half a hay carriage	3.00
1 Sled	7.00
2 ox yokes, horse tackling [harness]	4.50
3 old wheels & 4 cart bolts	8.75
1 log chain & 1 draft chain	5.00
3 small chains, horse "fettters"	3.50
1 large ring chain, 2 pairs of "coppes"	3.75
1 old cart tongue, half a sleigh & harness	13.00
1 iron bar, 1 grindstone	3.00
Old iron	3.00
Saddle, saddle bags & halters, side saddle	4.00
2 plows	13.00
Quarter part of harrow	2.00
Shovel, fork, hoe	2.25
3 hay forks, 2 rakes, hay hook, cart rope	2.50
10 scythes, 1 bush hoe	4.75
1 loom, 2 spinning wheels, 1 reel	6.50
Note for money loaned out at interest	150.00
	<hr/>
	\$8606.88

Appendices

John Bronsdon, 1832

Norfolk Probate 2583

He evidently was a small farmer, not very prosperous, and considerably in debt when he died. He lived in the southerly of the two old houses still standing across Canton Avenue from the Suffolk Resolves House at its new location. There is certainly little in this inventory beyond the bare necessities of a farming existence. He paid a tax that was well below the average of that of some 197 Milton property owners, but there were many non-property owners who paid a much smaller tax on their personal property only. If we include these, 138 paid more than Bronsdon did, and 119 paid less, but some 60 of these latter owned no real estate. The revised value of the estate is about \$16,000 based on present values.

Homestead of 22 acres and buildings	\$1075.00
Wood lot and pasture, 10 acres	175.00
4 bedsteads, beds, and bedding	37.50
2 feather beds and bedding, trundle bedstead	12.00
Low corded bedstead, 5 sheets	2.75
12 chairs, rocking chair, 2 armchairs	5.40
6 chairs, Pembroke table, 2 tables, work table	5.75
Bureau, light stand, writing desk, chest	8.00
3 chests, meal chest and sieve, 2 bread troughs	3.20
Waiter, glass and crockery ware, tin ware	6.25
2 looking glasses, knives and forks, iron ware	6.20
Pair andirons, fire set, stone ware, table and desk	2.15
Candlesticks, 2 spoons, 3 wash tubs, copper kettle	2.00
Scythes and snaths, 4 forks, 4 rakes, 5 hoes	3.30
Spade and shovel, 2 iron bars, chains, edge tools	5.62
Crosscut saw, beetle and wedges, 25 flour bags, 7 cider barrels	6.25
Lot of old iron, hay hook, carpenter's tools, 2 guns and equipment	13.20
Grindstone, horse sled, pung, horse plow	16.50
Horse traces and harness	8.25
4 horse wagon wheels, poultry wagon, pair chaise wheels	12.00
Horse wagon, pork and tub, soap and tub, unfinished hay cart	21.10

Appendices

Hay cart and 4 wheels, 1 pig, quantity of manure	24.00
10 bushels carrots, 1 bushel turnips, 10 bushels potatoes	5.58
Timber, plank and posts, wood ashes	45.45
Horse, 2 cows, 6 tons English hay	158.00
Wearing apparel	10.00
Library	1.00
Notes due him	50.70
	\$1722.25

Real estate was found to be overvalued and the total was later revised to	1331.25
--	---------

Isaac Tucker, 1838

Norfolk Probate 18,790

Captain Isaac Tucker lived on Tucker Hill in the old house still standing at 1023 Randolph Avenue. I can learn little about him, but it is obvious that he was a very well-to-do farmer. The estate would be equivalent today to about \$100,000.

There is little unusual in the inventory except for the mysterious "Soak-grees", which may be phonetic spelling for something which I cannot fathom. The bells on the sleigh strike a cheerful note, and the considerable sum loaned out at interest denotes a start toward a capitalism no longer limited to land and cattle.

Homestead 60 acres & buildings	\$3350.00
10 acres woodland	540.00
Meadows & salt meadows	325.00
1½ acres salt meadows	165.00
15 acres pasture	342.00
21 acres woodland	745.00
7 acres Beach Island lot & 10 acres	325.00
2 feather beds & bedding, best bureau	20.00
Another bureau, light stand, 8 quilts	11.50
6 blankets, cot & other bedstead, pewter ware	10.00
4 chests, 2 looking glasses, stuff in back chamber	5.25
1 bushel beans, tub of butter, "Soak-grees"	6.50
Card table, stuff in garret, cradle & trundle bedstead	8.75
2 fire sets, meal chest, chest with drawers, table	4.25

Appendices

6 baskets, 4 flat irons, brass kettle	3.25
2 silver tablespoons, 6 silver tea spoons	9.00
20 lbs lard, 16 lbs tallow, stuff in buttery—cellar	5.60
12 knives & forks, crockery ware in kitchen, hollow ware	3.00
1 yoke of oxen, 1 horse, brown cow & yellow cow	192.00
Old cow, whitefaced cow, ox wagon, ox cart	76.00
Horse wagon & tackling, hay picket, 3 plows	39.00
7 chains, tools in barn, 4 ladders, ox yokes	9.50
Horse tackling (harness), clapboards, stuff and tools in shop	10.75
Sleigh & bells, grindstone, chaise & tackling	17.25
Wheel barrow, vinegar & cask, old iron, sleds	8.25
Barley, corn, 6 meal bags, tools in corn barn	24.35
20 cords wood, chestnut stuff, oak & walnut stuff, clock	71.00
14 chairs, 8 barrels of cider, 6 casks, half barrel of soap	25.50
25 bushels potatoes, 50 lbs beef, 120 lbs pork, barrel of apples	24.50
Stuff in cellar, due on account	36.00
Money out on loan	1419.07
Cash on hand	70.00
Hay, fodder, gun & accouterments	45.00
	\$7947.27

Nathaniel Tucker, Esq., 1838

Norfolk Probate 18,811

He lived in the house still standing at 11 Hillside Street, built on the site of the Samuel Miller house which burned in 1770. He was a descendant of Robert Tucker in the fifth generation and is an example of what five generations of successful farming could produce. The estate would be equivalent to well over half a million dollars today.

Almost a quarter of this estate was invested in securities, and nearly a half loaned out, presumably on mortgages. Tucker probably farmed some of his land and may have leased part of it, but it is obvious that a very considerable portion of his income came from invested capital which must have produced a return of more than \$5.00 a day. In that period of low prices and no income taxes this represented affluence. Although the inventory does not

Appendices

show it, Tucker at one time was engaged in the business of baking crackers. A very interesting item is the pew in Boston's Old South Church, as well as one in the Unitarian Church in Milton. Since the Old South Church still adhered to the Trinitarian faith of its founders, it would seem that the Squire hoped to assure himself alternate routes to heaven. In 1836 his personal and real estates were appraised for tax purposes at \$26,000. At least five citizens were assessed a still higher figure than was Nathaniel, but their wealth came from trade and the law, acquired, however, in all cases but one within the town. Milton's wealth was beginning to become appreciable.

Homestead farm	\$ 10,000.00
298 $\frac{3}{4}$ acres land of all sorts	11,225.00
5 shares Taunton & Boston Turnpike	5.00
8 shares Blue Hill Turnpike	800.00
20 shares Fairhaven Bank	1800.00
5 shares Wareham Bank	450.00
20 shares Randolph Bank	1800.00
10 shares State Bank	550.00
20 shares Dorchester & Milton Bank (Blue Hill)	1900.00
54 shares Fairhaven Insurance Co.	5400.00
Hay in barn	286.00
1 yoke oxen	100.00
9 cows	225.00
2 horses	106.00
2 pigs	24.00
4 $\frac{1}{2}$ thousand cedar shingles	12.00
2 one horse wagons	30.00
1 cart	40.00
Posts[?], sleds, etc.	20.00
Plow, casks, lumber, etc., in cider house	30.00
Harrow & roller	2.00
Pine boards	6.00
Carryall & harness	30.00
1 chaise, harness, buffalo robe & whip	75.00
"Lots of trumpery in carriage house"	6.00
1 sleigh	20.00
Tools in tool house	20.00
Lot of old iron & hay cutter	8.00

Appendices

Lot of cedar posts	30.00
White oak timber	4.00
Chestnut timber	15.00
Dry & green wood	225.00
9¾ thousand pine shingles	36.00
Lot of hoop poles	5.00
Provisions & stores in house	427.84
Lumber at Canton	21.00
Pew in Old South Church	300.00
1/16 share of whole ship "Chas. Drew"	1830.47
2 sheds	45.00
Pew in old Meeting House	12.00
Furniture	400.00
Book accounts	185.32
Cash on hand	36.72
Money out on loan	15,422.14
	\$54,127.49

Miscellaneous Notes on other Inventories

John Dike was a farmer, evidently in a fairly small way when he died in 1692, for he owned only five acres of tilled land and five acres of meadow. He had three cows, four heifers, four swine and eleven pigs, and was growing both wheat and Indian corn at the time of his death. He paid about an average tax, although his estate was relatively small, £108, or about \$12,000 today. I think that he lived on Brush Hill.

Enoch Badcock, a shipwright, fell from a ship in May of 1695 and was killed. The inventory of his estate shows that he was quite well-to-do and owned two Negro slaves. He did a little subsistence farming on the side as well as building ships and had horses, cows, and swine, in addition to an ox which he could have used in the shipyard. He also had two looking glasses and some books besides the usual housekeeping requirements.

Appendices

Dr. Benjamin Stedman was an early, if not the first, doctor in Milton. He lived somewhere in the eastern part of the town and when he died in 1752 his moderate estate of £486 included 33 acres of land, a horse and a cow, but no dwelling house.

The first mention in any Milton inventory of a kitchen stove for cooking appears in 1845, but they were being made in Troy, N. Y., at least as early as 1820.

APPENDIX NUMBER 2

Milton Houses Built Before 1805 and Still Standing in 1955

This list of old houses is probably not complete and may well contain some errors. It is based upon a study by the late Arthur H. Tucker and further refined and expanded by Mrs. Harold B. Garland and Mrs. James B. Ayer.

NO.	ORIGINAL OWNER	BUILT	OWNER OR TENANT
ADAMS STREET			
67-69	Joseph Fenno	1765	(Barber-shop)
203	Dr. Amos Holbrook	1801	Joseph P. Spang
233	Col. Joseph Gooch	<i>about</i> 1740	Mrs. Ellerton Whitney
278	Samuel Swift	<i>before</i> 1740	Dr. Kenneth Sands
362	Nathan Babcock	<i>before</i> 1753	M. J. Noonan
401	Widow Belcher	<i>before</i> 1776	William B. Crosby
594	Glover-Gardner	<i>about</i> 1785	Miss Olds
631	Launcelot Pierce	<i>about</i> 1750	R. C. Blatchford
BRUSH HILL ROAD			
504	Roger Sumner	<i>about</i> 1678	Wm. D. Benjes
676	Robert Tucker	<i>about</i> 1670	H. L. Whitney (<i>earliest house in Milton</i>)
805	Dana Tucker	<i>before</i> 1798	G. P. Baker
823	James Tucker	<i>before</i> 1798	Joseph Leland
1045	Maj. Joseph Bent	<i>before</i> 1798	Robert H. Gardiner
1144	John Crehore	<i>about</i> 1724	Dr. Henry Beecher
1465	Isaac Davenport	<i>about</i> 1794	Mrs. Henry Binney
1493	Davenport farmhouse	1707	Kennard Wakefield

Appendices

CANTON AVENUE

215	Joseph Babcock	<i>before</i> 1798	Mrs. G. N. Hurd
693	Lemuel Gulliver	1798	Miss Fairbank
720	John Gulliver	<i>before</i> 1752	W. H. Leary
730	Rev. Nathaniel Robbins	1752	W. N. Sweet
1238	Nath. Davenport	<i>about</i> 1788	Roger Martin
1350	Dr. John Sprague	<i>about</i> 1780	Dr. J. B. Ayer
1370	Suffolk Resolves House	<i>old part built late</i> 1600's	
	Vose-Holbrook	<i>new part built</i> 1765	
1514	Nathaniel Davenport	<i>before</i> 1798	Mrs. John Bartol
1580	Phineas Davenport	<i>about</i> 1802	Edward Sawyer
1631	William Crehore	1781	William Rust
1839	William Davenport	<i>part of present house</i>	
		1720	S. H. Wolcott

HIGHLAND STREET

386	John Gibbons	<i>about</i> 1801	Bent Nursing Home
-----	--------------	-------------------	-------------------

HILLSIDE STREET

11	Samuel Miller	<i>about</i> 1771	R. Cote
93	Samuel Tucker	1713	Howard Whiteside
188	French-Bronsdon	<i>part about</i>	
		1770	Dr. M. Putnam
428	Capen House, moved from Dorchester	1636	K. Webster

HOLMES LANE

36	Elijah Wadsworth	1765	Wm. J. Richards
----	------------------	------	-----------------

MORTON ROAD

78	Gov. Robbins-Cabot	1800	Walter D. Brooks
----	--------------------	------	------------------

RANDOLPH AVENUE

239	Thomas Hollis	<i>about</i> 1805	Hatherly Foster
1023	Capt. Isaac Tucker	1726	R. Cote
1100	Nathaniel Tucker	1790	F. E. Firth

ROBBINS STREET

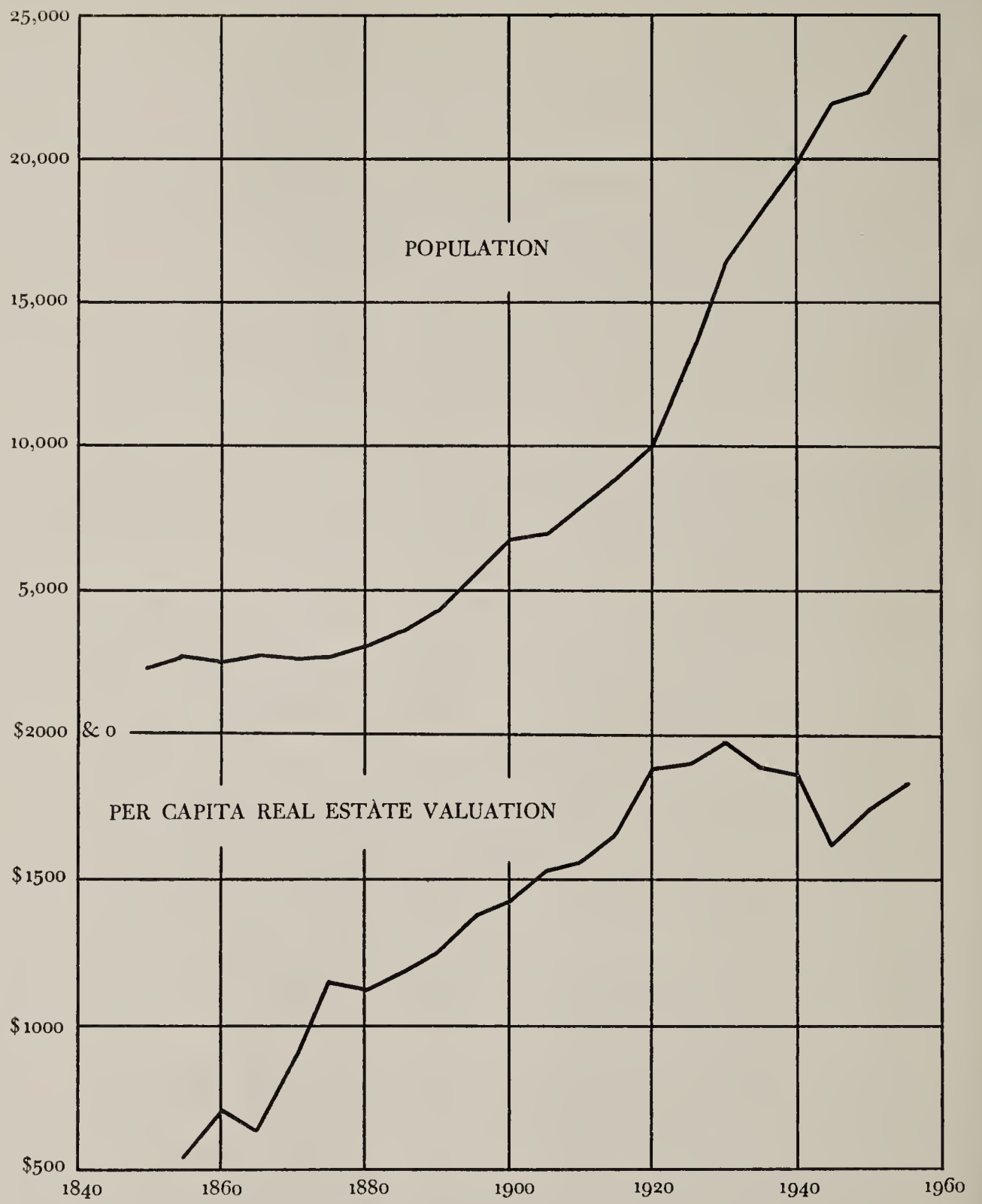
23	Manassah Tucker	1708	Mrs. W. B. Dexter
----	-----------------	------	-------------------

MYERS LANE

19	William Tucker	1760	Miss Helen Walsh
----	----------------	------	------------------

VOSE'S LANE

34	Gen. Joseph Vose	1761	W. R. Sparrell
----	------------------	------	----------------



Curves of Population & Valuation

APPENDIX NUMBER 3

Statistical and Financial Figures

The table on page 246 lists some significant statistical data on the growth of Milton, and the chart presents two curves of population and of real estate valuation per capita. The population curve shows that for twenty years up until 1875 the population of the town remained almost static, but just after the latter year a very decided growth trend appears which continued at a practically constant rate until 1920 when it showed a still further material increase. The per capita valuation curve tells us that during the 1875-1920 period this population growth was accompanied by ever-increasing per capita real estate values. Since 1920, however, the converse has been true and the valuation has reversed its growth trend and gone sideways and somewhat backward. If we can measure the relative wealth of a town by its per capita valuation, and I think that such a measurement is not an unfair one, it is evident that, until the market crash of 1929 ushered in a social revolution, Milton was a town of ever-increasing wealth. The last quarter century has shown a reversal, particularly when we realize that today's valuations are in depreciated dollars. Milton is no longer a rich town.

Appendices

Statistical and Financial Figures

Year	Population	Real Estate Valuation	Total Town Expenditures	Tax Rate per 1000	Town's Funded Debt
1838	<i>about</i> 1,800		\$5,559		\$1,655
1850	2,241		7,837		1,700
1855	2,656	\$1,395,500	30,075	6.00	10,569
1860	2,646	1,852,500	26,300	4.50	16,802
1865	2,770	1,740,800	96,499	10.00	31,966
1870	2,683	2,338,300	88,206	9.00	19,222
1875	2,738	3,150,500	100,582	6.30	0
1880	3,206	3,587,200	100,938	7.30	0
1885	3,555	4,219,050	198,738	6.00	4,995
1890	4,278	5,309,350	305,672	8.00	29,358
1895	5,518	7,621,100	318,344	7.00	26,500
1900	6,578	9,266,400		11.00	176,500
1905	6,948	10,640,172		12.80	387,500
1910	7,877	12,213,460	386,191	11.90	396,000
1915	8,882	14,650,530	398,967	12.50	307,000
1920	9,985	18,754,135	600,650	21.60	361,500
1925	12,779	24,388,725	1,679,842	23.80	746,000
1930	16,200	32,001,850	1,427,197	26.80	1,150,000
1935	18,103	34,123,200	1,411,610	27.80	1,318,000
1940	19,714	36,820,985	1,596,473	26.40	1,038,000
1945	21,800	35,310,585	1,658,489	26.80	621,000
1950	22,355	38,969,735	2,630,592	37.40	398,000
1955	24,292	44,874,235	3,706,552	46.00	1,441,000

NOTE The total expenditures given vary somewhat from time to time in the method by which they were reported, but they are essentially comparable. Previous to 1917 stocks and bonds were taxed as personal property by the Town, therefore the total valuation decreased materially and the tax rate rose considerably in the following year.

APPENDIX NUMBER 4

Biographical Sketches of Prominent Milton Residents 1634-1929

This section presents a number of very brief notes on certain people who have been of importance in the history of Milton, and on certain Milton citizens who have achieved prominence through one cause or another. In a very few exceptional cases persons living after 1929 have been included, but in general this appendix is limited to those who died before 1930.

APTHORP, Harrison Otis 1857-1905

In 1887 he came to Milton Academy and laid the foundations upon which a great school was built.

BADCOCK, Robert -1694

The first of a long line of Milton Babcocks, he was probably here as early as 1648. He is listed as Sergeant in 1670, and the Milton records report his death as that of "Captain Robart Badcock".

BAKER, Edmund J. 1805-1890

Grandson of Daniel Vose through the second marriage of Elizabeth Vose Lillie, he became a surveyor and a most prominent citizen of Dorchester and Milton. While he appears always to have been a citizen of the former town, he was also active in Milton affairs and served on at least two committees appointed by our Town Meeting. A keen historian, he was one of the founders of the Dorchester Antiquarian Society, and wrote part of the history of Dorchester published by that Society. His sister, Lydia, married the Rev. Benjamin Huntoon, the first Unitarian minister in Milton.

BAKER, Dr. James 1739-1825

After trying school teaching, the ministry, medicine and trade, he went into chocolate-making in Milton in 1780. His son Walter (1792-1852) succeeded him in the business which eventually grew into the great chocolate factory of Walter Baker & Co. A second son, Edmund, was the father of Edmund J. Baker.

Appendices

BELCHER, Governor Jonathan 1681-1757

A successful merchant and politician, he had a summer home in Milton at today's 401 Adams Street, and had planned an ambitious mansion house which never was built.

BLAKE, William 1620-1703

A prominent early settler in the town, he held various offices in the local government.

BOIES, Captain James 1702-1798

A native of the north of Ireland, he married a daughter of Jeremiah Smith in 1759 and established a paper mill at Mattapan. The Milton records call him "Captain", perhaps from his service in connection with the fascines used on Dorchester Heights.

BOURNE, Nehemiah 1611-1691

Son of a shipwright, it is probable that he built vessels in Dorchester. Owned considerable land in Milton between Adams Street and the river. In about 1644 he served as a Major in a Cromwellian regiment, but in the following year was Sergeant-Major (Commander) of Massachusetts' Suffolk Regiment. He returned to England in 1646 and became an Admiral in the Parliamentary Navy.

BOWDITCH, Ernest W. 1850-1918

A nationally known landscape architect and sanitary engineer, he designed the Milton sewer system and was a Sewer Commissioner for many years.

BRIGGS, Daniel 1754-1825

A shipbuilder of Pembroke, he came here at the close of the Revolution and established a shipyard. See chapter "The River".

BRYANT, Gridley 1789-1867

Engineer and builder, he initiated the building of the Granite Railway, and devised many of the necessary appliances, switches, turntables, etc. He invented the movable truck used on the 8-wheel rail car. He later practiced engineering and surveying in this neighborhood.

CHICKATAUBUT -1633

Chief of the remnants of the Neponset Indians. In 1630 he had from 50 to 60 subjects. He was not too friendly to the English at this time, but apparently did not oppose them in any way. Died of smallpox.

Appendices

CHURCHILL, Asaph 1765-1841

Left alone at a very early age, he worked his own way through Harvard and completed his studies for the law at which he soon was successful. Was a most prominent citizen of the town, acquiring large tracts of land, which he stocked with cattle, believing this more profitable than cultivation.

CHURCHILL, Joseph McKean 1821-1886

Son of Asaph Churchill, he was active in State politics, Captain in the Civil War, Overseer of Harvard, and a Judge of the Boston Municipal Court. In the course of 25 years he served as Milton's Moderator 32 times.

COLLECOTT, Richard circa 1603-1686

A fur trader, tailor, soldier and mariner, he was a prominent citizen of Dorchester and built what was probably the first house in Milton. See General Index.

CRANE, Henry 1621-1709

An iron worker, he lived on Adams Street near the Quincy line. He was in Milton by 1655.

CREHORE, Benjamin 1765-1832

A mechanical genius and jack-of-all-trades from stage machinery and musical instruments to power looms, he had a shop in Milton Village for many years.

CUNNINGHAM, Edward 1823-1889

A partner of Russell and Co., he made a fortune in the China trade, and, retiring to Milton in about 1857, built the house now occupied by the Convalescent Home. His estate of some 150 acres included most of today's Cunningham Park as well as land extending northwest to Pleasant Street. He was shot on his own grounds by a trespasser in 1889 and died the next day. The Trustees under the will of Mary A. Cunningham, his aunt, bought the estate in 1905 and established today's Cunningham Park.

CUNNINGHAM, Mary A. 1814-1904

Daughter of Ralph Bennet Forbes, she married the Rev. Francis Cunningham. During the Civil War she was very active in conducting relief measures for the troops and their families. She left practically the whole of her considerable fortune to three trustees to be utilized for the benefit of the inhabitants of Milton. The trustees established and ever since have operated Cunningham Park with funds made available by her generous bequest.

Appendices

DANIELS, William ? -1678?

Kept an inn on Adams Street on north side about halfway between Dudley Lane and Algerine Corner. The Foye "stately and elegant mansion" was built on the site of the inn in 1728.

FELT, Willard

Built the first cars for the Granite Railway in his stone shop still standing on the north side of the Squantum Street entrance to the Southeast Expressway.

FORBES, John Murray 1770?-1831

Son of the Rev. John Forbes and Dorothy Murray, he lived in Milton as a boy, graduated from Harvard in 1787, and then studied law. Was appointed Consul at Hamburg in 1801, then Chargé d'Affaires at Copenhagen, and finally Minister to Buenos Aires until his death.

FORBES, John M. 1813-1898

It is impossible to do justice to this great and good man in a short paragraph. His life is amply covered in books already published. Most of his many benefactions were carefully concealed, but the more I have studied Milton history of his period, the more I have appreciated the great good which he did and the many kindnesses which he showed to those in need of help. His services to the Union during the Civil War were of great value.

FORBES, Ralph Bennet 1773-1824

Born on the Brush Hill farm of his great-uncle, James Smith, he could be called the first real Milton Forbes. He was trained as a merchant and engaged in trade in various places. He married Margaret Perkins, sister of Colonel Thomas Handasyd Perkins, and was the father of Robert Bennet Forbes, John Murray Forbes, and Mary A. Cunningham.

FORBES, Robert Bennet 1804-1889

Older brother of John M. Forbes, he and his mother were on a ship captured by the British in 1811. They were held on board the warship for some days and once, when a French ship was being attacked, the seven-year-old boy was shown how to fire a cannon at the Frenchmen. He became a brilliant sea captain and retired from the sea at thirty. In 1847 the "Jamestown" was borrowed from our Navy in order to carry relief supplies to the sufferers from the Irish famine of that year, and Commodore Forbes sailed in command. In his old age he delighted in making model boats for the youth of Milton Hill.

Appendices

FORBES, Colonel William H. 1840-1897

Son of John M. Forbes, officer in the Civil War and first president of the ancestor of the American Telephone & Telegraph Company.

GILE, Rev. Samuel 1780-1836

A native of New Hampshire and a graduate of Dartmouth, Class of 1804, he was ordained at the Milton Church in 1807. It was his misfortune to be the minister at the time of the Unitarian break in 1834. He continued to minister to the Congregational group until his death.

GILL, John ? -1678

An early settler in Milton, he originally owned most of the top of Milton Hill, bought from the estate of Israel Stoughton. The Neponset Mill was also included in the purchase.

GLOVER, John ? -1653

A wealthy resident of Dorchester, he owned considerable land in the vicinity of today's Glover School which was operated for him by a resident farmer.

GLOVER, Dr. Samuel K. 1753-1839

Served during the Revolution and came to Milton in 1783. A selectman for twenty-five years and Milton's first postmaster.

GOOCH, Colonel Joseph 1700-1770

He seems to have been a thoroughly unpleasant person. Graduating from Harvard in 1720, he studied law in England and returned to Boston to practice. He quit Boston in spite because of failure to gain favor, and moved to Braintree where he succeeded in ousting Colonel Quincy from command of his regiment and secured the place for himself. He shortly became enraged with Braintree and came to Milton about 1744, where he built the house still standing at 233 Adams Street, later occupied for many years by Edward H. Robbins.

GOURGAS, John Mark 1766- ?

A native of Geneva, he went to London as a young man, remaining there for several years. He heard of and became much interested in Dr. Jenner's work on vaccination for the smallpox. He came to Milton in about 1803, and in the course of a few years' residence here promoted the idea of widespread vaccination. He and Dr. Holbrook probably deserve much of the credit for Milton's action in this direction in 1809.

Appendices

GULLIVER, Anthony 1619-1706

Came to Milton in 1646, and gave his name to Gulliver's Creek. He lived on Squantum Street. He acquired a large amount of land on Canton Avenue near the present Pierce School, and Gullivers flourished in that area for many years.

HANNON, John ? -1779?

An Irishman and a chocolate maker, he arrived in Milton in 1764, and was assisted by James Boies in setting up a manufactory of chocolate in Milton Village. In 1773 he married Elizabeth Gore and left her and the country six years later, possibly drowning on the voyage back to Ireland.

HARLING, Thomas 1745-1801

Is probably the same Harling who had a nail-making shop in the Village near the Town Landing in the 1780's. At a somewhat later period he had a grist and sawmill a little upstream from the MDC skating rink of 1954. Harland Street took its name, but not its spelling, from him.

HARRIS, Dr. Thaddeus W. 1795-1856

Studied medicine under Milton's Dr. Holbrook and married his daughter. Practiced in Milton about 1820-1831, poor health forced his retirement. He then became librarian at Harvard for a quarter century. Was a distinguished entomologist.

HINCKLEY, Thomas H. 1813-1896

Against the wishes of his father, he studied drawing in Philadelphia evenings while "engaged in mercantile pursuits", a genteel expression for clerking in a store. In 1833 he started in Boston as a sign painter, and then graduated into portraiture. His success came in the field of animal paintings which had a great vogue during the Victorian period. He sold many paintings of this nature at what were high prices for the times. His house and small studio stood on Brook Road just east of Ridge Road and opposite the Town Field. His daughter, Mary Hinckley, 1844-1944, inherited his artistic ability and published several illustrated scientific papers on tadpoles, frogs and toads, as well as some studies in Milton history.

HOBART, Caleb ? -1843

Early in the last century he engaged with very considerable success in the meat trade, dealing mostly in mutton, and in the associated wool pulling and skin business. His shop was near Ruggles Lane at Pine Tree Brook. In his will he left a considerable sum for the benefit of the poor of Milton.

Appendices

HOLBROOK, Dr. Amos 1754-1842

Having just completed his medical education, he joined the Continental Army as a surgeon's mate in 1775, resigning in 1777 because of poor health. He then went as surgeon on a privateer, which lay in a French port for several months, thus allowing him to visit hospitals in that country, and to improve his medical knowledge. He established himself in Milton in about 1778. In 1783 he married Patience, daughter of Daniel Vose, and lived for a period in the Suffolk Resolves House, which very probably was altered to its present form for his occupancy. Patience died in 1789 and he married Jerusha Robinson of Dorchester. In 1800 he built the house at 203 Adams Street, which later was owned for many years by Mary A. Cunningham. His connection with the Milton smallpox vaccination is mentioned under that subject.

HOLLIS, Thomas 1773-1859

An early operator in the granite business in the Milton area. He built the house still standing on the northwest corner of Randolph Avenue and Brook Road.

HOLLIS, Thomas, Jr. 1801-1873

Succeeded his father in the business. From about the middle of the century he lived in the stone Railway House at East Milton. Was President of the Granite Railway Company and laid the granite foundations for the present Minot's Ledge lighthouse.

HOLMAN, John ? -1652

A prominent early settler in that part of Dorchester which became Milton. He held various town offices and was an officer of the Dorchester trained band, and a member of the Artillery Company. He was a partner of Collicott's in the fur trade in 1641. His house stood on the site of the Belcher house at 401 Adams Street.

HOLMES, Dr. Christopher Columbus 1817-1882

For over forty years he ministered to the ills of the town. Was Captain of the First Corps of Cadets, an accomplished musician, and a good friend.

HOUGHTON, Ralph 1623-1705

Settled in Milton in 1690 and built first house southeast of Blue Hill. Houghton's Pond was named after him. The family's name is mentioned many times in the Milton Records.

Appendices

How, Peggy 1760?– ?

She had a small school during the first years of the nineteenth century in a house on the southeast corner of Randolph Avenue and Centre Street, and also took Milton Academy boys as boarders. John M. Forbes lived in this house with his mother at one time.

HUNTOON, Rev. Benjamin ? –1864

The first Unitarian minister in Milton, he was installed in 1834, but served for less than three years. While in Milton he married Lydia Baker, granddaughter of Daniel Vose. He went to a church in Cincinnati, but eventually returned to Canton, where he died. His son Daniel T. V. Huntoon wrote the excellent history of Canton.

HUTCHINSON, Gov. Thomas 1711–1780

A man much maligned by history, he loved his country and Milton, but felt that the King was right. Died in exile in England. An excellent short biography by C. K. Shipton is found in Sibley's *Harvard Lives*, Volume VIII.

HUTCHINSON, William 1586–1642

His wife was Anne Hutchinson, and at one time he owned much of the land in East Milton between Gulliver's Creek and the Quincy line. Governor Thomas Hutchinson was his great-great-grandson.

KINSLEY, Stephen ? –1673

Probably the first lay minister in Milton, he came here from Braintree in the early days and settled on Adams Street near Algerine Corner. He was one of the three petitioners for the establishment of Milton, and was the first representative to the General Court.

KITCHAMAKIN (also CUTSHUMAQUIN)

Brother of Chickataubut, he was Chief of the remnants of the Neponset Indians in 1636. He was present with Sergeant Collocott when the treaty was made with the Narragansett Indians in 1645, probably as interpreter.

LESLEY, Peter (J. P. Lesley) 1819–1903

Graduate of the Princeton Divinity School, he had previously assisted in the first geological survey of Pennsylvania. He came to the Milton Congregational Church in 1847 and preached for a period, but was never approved by the Norfolk Association of Ministers because of a charge of heterodoxy. Married a niece of Hon. James H. Robbins in 1849. Soon left Milton, gave up the ministry and returned to geology, becoming Professor at University of Pennsylvania and later an eminent consulting geologist. Mrs. Lesley was

Appendices

very active in organized charities in Philadelphia. In 1885 her brother and her cousin John M. Forbes gave her a house on Central Avenue near Columbine Road, to which the Lesleys eventually retired.

LILLIE, Major John 1755?-1801

Enlisted in the artillery at the outbreak of the Revolution, eventually becoming a Captain. He was at one time Aide-de-Camp to General Knox, and was presented with a sword by Lafayette. Knox referred to him as "Major", but there is no formal record of this rank. Shortly after the war he married Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel Vose. Relatively unsuccessful in commerce, he worked for a period building forts at Gloucester and (perhaps) other ports, and then was inspector of customs at Boston. In 1801 he was appointed Captain in the Army and assigned to the command of West Point, where he made preparations for the opening of the Military Academy, which occurred in the month of his death. His daughter Elizabeth married Jesse Pierce and was the mother of Henry L. and Edward L. Pierce. Mrs. Lillie later married Edmund Baker and was mother of Edmund J. Baker.

LION, Preserved 1688-1728?

Just think of Preserved Lion, what a wonderful name! He was the son of one of the earliest settlers in the Brush Hill area, George Lion, who died in 1694, and his wife, Thankfull Lion. His sister was christened Silence, and one would like to know how she lived up to her name.

McKEAN, Rev. Joseph 1776-1818

Minister in Milton 1797-1804. See further details in chapter "The Church".

McLEAN, Hugh 1724-1799

A native of the North of Ireland, he went first to Maine, and then came to Milton where he took up papermaking with James Boies whose daughter he married. He lived in the old Jackson House at Mattapan.

McLEAN, John 1761-1823?

Son of Hugh, he went into business in Boston. After making and losing one fortune, he acquired another, much of which was left to the Massachusetts General Hospital. The McLean Asylum was named after him.

MARTIN, Nathan C. 1790-1864

Teacher in the Dorchester school on River Street for seven years, he became postmaster in Milton in 1817 and held that office in all for thirty-seven years. Was active in the Militia, the Milton Church and in town affairs. His son,

Appendices

Henry B. Martin, 1835–1927, was Town Clerk for forty years. The latter's daughter, Eleanor P. Martin, 1873–1957, established the Martin Fund for charitable purposes, and the Audubon Sanctuary on Maple Street. She was much interested in the early history of Milton and wrote several papers on this subject.

MIGHILL, Rev. Thomas

Minister in Milton 1671–1678. See further details in chapter "The Church".

MILLER, Rev. Ebenezer 1703–1763

Son of Samuel Miller, who ran a famous inn on Adams Street near Dudley Lane, and owned much land in the Hillside Street area, he was prepared for Harvard by the Rev. Peter Thacher and graduated in 1722. He became an Anglican, went to England in 1726 and was given an M.A. by Oxford, after a fortnight's residence. He married a well-to-do English girl, was ordained and appointed missionary to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and was back in Boston late in 1727. All these accomplishments were crammed into about eighteen months! He became the Church of England minister in Quincy and assisted other little groups of Anglicans in the South Shore area. He visited England again in 1746 and was given a D.D. degree by Oxford, a somewhat uncommon honor in those days. He served the Braintree church until his death.

MILLER, Colonel Stephen 1727–1817

Grandson of the Samuel Miller who had the inn on Adams Street, he lived near Hillside Street and Randolph Avenue. A prominent citizen of the town, he was loyal to his King and moved to New Brunswick.

Samuel Miller, 1696–1761, his father, filled many town offices during his lifetime. He was the second richest man in Milton at the time of his death. Andrew Belcher, the late governor's son, alone paid a larger tax.

MORISON, Rev. John H. 1808–1896

Unitarian minister in Milton from 1846–1886, he gathered historical facts and preached two sermons on Milton's history at the 200th anniversary in 1862.

PIERCE, Edward L. 1829–1897

Son of Colonel Jesse Pierce and great-grandson of Daniel Vose, he graduated from Brown and Harvard Law School and became an active abolitionist. After Civil War service both as a soldier and as an agent of the Treasury Department he settled in Milton and was active in politics. A keen historian, he

Appendices

wrote the standard biography of Charles Sumner. He was Moderator of Milton town meeting for a number of years. His son, Charles Sumner Pierce, also held this position for over a quarter century, as well as being the first Town Counsel, appointed such by the Selectmen in 1909.

PIERCE, Henry L. 1825-1896

After completing his schooling at the Bridgewater Normal School, his health became too poor to allow him to teach school. By his mid-twenties he was clerking in the Baker Chocolate Mill. In 1852 he leased the mill from the estate of Walter Baker and commenced to build it up into a great success. Mayor of Boston and member of Congress. Brother of Edward L. Pierce.

PIERCE, Dr. M. Vassar 1856-1937

After graduating from Harvard Medical School in 1880, he studied abroad for two years and then became a much loved doctor here until his death.

PITCHER, Andrew ? -1660

One of the earliest settlers in Milton, his house was on the northern side of Thacher Street at Canton Avenue. His son, Nathaniel, 1651-1736, had a tannery in the hollow between the hospital and Canton Avenue just north of Highland Street, and it seems possible that Andrew first established it.

REED, Jason 1794-1873

A lawyer, he was Town Clerk for thirty years. His estate, on the opposite side of Reedsdale Road from the Public Library, was named "Reedsdale" and gave its name to the street.

ROBBINS, Hon. Edward Hutchinson 1758-1829

Son of Rev. Nathaniel Robbins, he married Elizabeth Murray, sister of Mrs. John (Dorothy) Forbes. A lawyer, active in local and state politics, he was elected Lieutenant-Governor in 1802. Retiring from that office in 1807, he was appointed Judge of Probate for Norfolk County. A very outstanding citizen of the town, and instrumental in the founding of Milton Academy.

ROBBINS, James Murray 1796-1885

Son of Hon. Edward H. Robbins, he continued the family's tradition of service to the town. He went to school at Milton Academy and later was the President of its Trustees for many years. He was a successful merchant and a keen historian. In the latter capacity he was one of the committee appointed by the town in 1884 to prepare a history of Milton. This was done by Dr. Teele, assisted by the other members of the committee.

Appendices

ROBBINS, Rev. Nathaniel 1726-1795

Minister in Milton 1751-1795. See further details in chapter "The Church".

ROTCH, A. Lawrence 1861-1912

Graduate of Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1884, he commenced building the Blue Hill Observatory in that same year. A keen scientist and a great traveler, he visited many scientific establishments in Europe, and climbed Mt. Blanc three times. Was professor of meteorology at Harvard and was chosen exchange professor to the Sorbonne just before his death. Was active in the early days of aviation and was awarded a number of foreign decorations. See the section on the Blue Hill Observatory.

ROTCH, Joanna 1826-1911

She came to Milton from New Bedford and was long active in parish and charitable work. For years she gave an annual picnic at Houghton's Pond for all the children of the Milton Hill area.

RUGGLES, John 1773-1846

Selectman for a total of twenty-six years, and Town Clerk for twenty-one, Assessor and Representative to the General Court, he served the town in many ways for many years.

RUSSELL, Colonel Henry S. 1838-1905

Colonel of the Fifth Massachusetts Cavalry in the Civil War, he married a Forbes and acquired large land holdings in the town. He served Boston as Police Commissioner and as Fire Commissioner, and also held various offices in this town. Grandson of the Hon. Jonathan Russell.

His son, James S. Russell, 1864-1951, served the town in many useful capacities throughout his life.

RUSSELL, Hon. Jonathan 1771-1832

A Providence boy, he graduated from Brown and became a lawyer, but was also active in trade and politics. Was a consul in France, minister at Stockholm, and one of the five commissioners who negotiated the treaty of Ghent in 1814. He then became minister to Norway and Sweden until 1818. He married Lydia Smith, whose father, Barney, had bought the Governor Hutchinson house on Milton Hill.

SAFFORD, Nathaniel F. 1815-1891

A lawyer prominent in local affairs, a long-time resident of Milton, he served as a Norfolk County commissioner for many years.

Appendices

SANDERSON, Isaac

A papermaker from Watertown, he took over operation of the old paper mill in 1801 and continued it until 1834, when it was sold to Dr. Jonathan Ware. He experimented with making paper out of beach grass.

SMITH, James 1688-1769

A prosperous Boston sugar refiner, he built a house on Brush Hill in 1734. His wife was a Murray, who, marrying again in 1771, left the farm and house to her two Murray nieces, one of whom became Mrs. John Forbes, the other Mrs. Edward H. Robbins.

SMITH, Jeremiah 1704-1790

A native of the North of Ireland, he came with his wife to Boston in 1726 and to Milton in 1736. He worked for the paper mill company and soon bought their interest in the mill. He continued the paper business until it eventually passed to his son-in-law, Daniel Vose.

STEBBINS, Edith E. 1877-

The wife of Rev. Roderick Stebbins, Unitarian minister in Milton, 1886-1924, she devoted much of her life to the care of the unfortunate and served for many years on the Board of Public Welfare.

STONE, Nathaniel H. 1853-1927

A useful citizen of the Town who served in many ways, he was one of the original Cunningham trustees.

STOUGHTON, Israel ? -1645

A prominent early settler of Dorchester, he built Neponset Mill and owned much of the land on Milton Hill. He commanded the Massachusetts forces in the Pequot War. He returned to England to enter the Parliamentary Army, in which he commanded a regiment.

His son, William, 1631-1701, served the Colony in many ways, eventually becoming Lieutenant-Governor and then acting Governor. He left a 40-acre farm to the poor of Milton, and to the Church a beautiful silver cup by Jeremiah Dummer, now in the possession of the Unitarian Church.

SUMNER, Roger 1632-1698

Settled on Brush Hill in about 1678 and founded a family long known in Milton. One descendent was Major General Edwin V. Sumner, who served through the first half of the Civil War, but died in 1863. Charles Pinckney Sumner, 1776-1839, was Sheriff of Suffolk County for many years and his son was Senator Charles Sumner of abolition fame.

Appendices

SWIFT, Thomas 1635-1718

Son of Thomas Swift of Dorchester, he was the first Milton Swift and was most prominent in town affairs, serving as Selectman for thirty-five years. His military service and connection with the Punkapoag Indians is told in the chapter "The Wars". He lived on Adams Street near Dudley Lane or in that vicinity. His son, Colonel Samuel Swift, 1683-1747, was also long prominent in the town and held many offices. The grandson of Colonel Samuel was Captain John Swift, 1747-1819, who lived on the site of the Milton telephone exchange and whose hatter's shop still stands today, the doctor's office building at 98 Adams Street.

TAYLOR, Rev. John 1704-1750

Minister in Milton 1728-1750. He appears to have been a cheerful and pleasant soul who was said to have been agreeable rather than great. He was opposed to the Great Awakening and Whitefield's preaching. He built his house on the site of the present Town Hall. It burned down in 1864.

TEELE, Rev. Albert K. 1821-1901

A graduate of Yale, Class of 1842, Dr. Teele came here from a Connecticut parish in 1850 and served the Congregational Church for the next twenty-five years. His work as minister led him into handling trusts and business affairs for some of his parishioners and he developed great interest in these directions. In 1875 he asked to be relieved of his pastoral duties and devoted all his attention to acting as a trustee and manager of investments. He was a keen historian and student of Milton antiquities. Dr. Teele's *History of Milton* credits him merely with editing the work, but he actually was the author of almost all of it. He also wrote a number of short historical studies for the local paper. From 1856 until 1890 he made weather observations for the Weather Bureau. He served the Town on the School Committee and in many other ways. He loved to sing, and not just hymns, for his rendition of "Ole Black Joe" was long remembered.

THACHER, Oxenbridge 1681-1772

Son of Rev. Peter Thacher, he graduated from Harvard in 1698 and appears to have preached to the Indians at Ponkapoag. He soon moved to Boston and engaged in trade as a brazier, which in those days meant a merchant dealing in all sorts of brass and copper wares, hinges, kettles, warming pans, candlesticks, etc. He was prominent in Boston politics, but upon his father's death returned to Milton where he remained for the rest of his long life. He was the father of the eminent lawyer Oxenbridge Thacher, 1722-1767.

Appendices

THACHER, Rev. Peter 1651-1727

Milton's first regular minister. See chapter "The Church".

TUCKER, Deacon John A. 1830-1916

Builder and contractor, he was a keen historian and delved deep into the ancient records. Author of several pamphlets on Milton's past. His son, Arthur H. Tucker, 1865-1930, continued the family interest in history and was most active in the Milton Historical Society.

TUCKER, Robert 1605?-1682

The first Milton Tucker, he settled on Brush Hill in 1663. His house, the oldest in Milton, still stands in rear of 676 Brush Hill Road.

TUCKER, Manasseh 1654-1743

Son of Robert, he was one of the founders of the Milton Church. His house still stands at 23 Robbins Street.

VOSE, Captain Daniel 1741-1807

A prosperous merchant and leading citizen. Mention is made of him at various places in this book. His house, formerly in the Village, has been restored and is now located at 1370 Canton Avenue.

VOSE, General Joseph 1739-1816

Was a major at start of the Revolution, and continued actively engaged in the service for the entire war. Brevetted Brigadier General at close of war. He built the old Vose House still standing on Vose's Lane. A brother, Elijah, 1744-1822, was a Lieutenant Colonel in his regiment.

VOSE, Colonel Josiah 1784-1845

Son of General Joseph Vose, he was a Captain and Major in the War of 1812, and continued in the regular service until his death.

VOSE, Robert 1599-1683

The first Vose in Milton, he lived near the junction of Canton Avenue and Brook Road. A prominent early settler and founder of one of the largest Milton families.

VOSE, Captain Thomas 1641-1708

The son of Robert Vose, he was in active service during King Philip's War. His son was Sergeant Thomas Vose, 1667-1722, the father of Captain Thomas Vose, 1707-1760, who established a farm in the vicinity of Canton Ave-

Appendices

nue and Atherton Street. This last Captain Thomas commanded a troop of horse in 1757, and was the father of Captain Daniel, the Milton Village merchant.

WADSWORTH, Rev. Benjamin 1670-1734

Son of Captain Samuel Wadsworth (see chapter "The Wars") he graduated from Harvard in 1690 and was minister of the First Church in Boston in 1696. In 1725 was chosen President of Harvard and retained that office until his death. His family's house burned in 1669, but the barn was saved and it was there that Benjamin was born. Wadsworth House at Harvard was built for him.

WADSWORTH, Captain Samuel ? -1676

A prominent citizen, he was killed by the Indians in King Philip's War. See chapter "The Wars".

WARE, Emma Forbes 1838-1898

Founder of the first Convalescent Home, and member of the School Committee for many years, she was a good citizen of the town.

WARE, Harriet 1834-1920

Long active in the affairs of the Unitarian Church, she was a Trustee of Milton Academy from 1879-1912.

WARE, Dr. Jonathan 1797-1877

Served as a surgeon's assistant in the War of 1812, received the degree of M.D. from Brown in 1821, and came to Milton in 1828. Married a Tileston of the Tileston & Hollingsworth family. In addition to his medical practice he owned a mill on the site of the old paper mill.

WEBSTER, Mary P. 1858-1950

A granddaughter of the second Thomas Hollis, she was very influential in starting the Milton Woman's Club.

WHITNEY, Mrs. A. D. T. 1824-1905

An author of novels and books for girls and of poetry, she came to Milton as a bride and lived here for the rest of her life.

WHITNEY, Ellerton P. 1858-1928

To him, probably more than to any other one man, is due the credit for the excellency of the Milton Fire Department around the turn of the century. He was a Metropolitan Park Commissioner, and was very active in improving the Blue Hills Reservation.

Appendices

WHITNEY, General Moses 1775-1859

Came to Milton from Roxbury in 1787 as a tanner's apprentice, eventually becoming a successful tanner and merchant of lumber and wool. He was Milton's second postmaster, holding the office for eleven years. A prominent citizen of the town and active in many ways, he also served in the State Militia, eventually becoming a Brigadier General.

WIGGLESWORTH, George 1853-1930

Of distinguished ancestry, he was a leader, in his quiet way, in every worthy civic and philanthropic movement in Milton.

WOLCOTT, Governor Roger 1847-1901

A lawyer, who devoted his energies to managing estates, he was Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts from 1892-1895, and Governor 1896-1898.

APPENDIX NUMBER 5

Suggested Further Reading

For those who would like to know a little more about the life and times of the early settlers the following books are well worth reading. They are far from dull.

Builders of the Bay Colony, Samuel E. Morison, Boston, 1930

Everyday Life In the Massachusetts Bay Colony, George F. Dow, Boston, 1935

History of New England, John Gorham Palfrey, Boston, 1899-1905

Three Episodes of Massachusetts History, 2 volumes, Charles Francis Adams, Boston, 1892

Social and Economic History of New England, 2 volumes, William B. Weedon, Boston, 1890

The First Frontier, Roy V. Coleman, New York, 1948

The Commonwealth History of Massachusetts, Albert Bushnell Hart, Editor, New York, 1929

APPENDIX NUMBER 6

Major Changes and Events Since 1929

- 1930 Jeanne d'Arc Academy founded
Woman's Club building started
- 1931 St. Mary of the Hills Parish established
- 1932 Mattapan Baptist Church remodeled
- 1935 Mary A. Cunningham Junior High School built
St. Agatha's Church built
- 1937 Children's Church at Unitarian Church
New Post Office Building at East Milton
- 1938 Zoning by-law adopted by Town
- 1940 Parkway Church new building completed
Railroad ceases to operate at East Milton
- 1941 St. Agatha's Parochial School established
- 1943 Temple Shalom established
- 1945 Columban Seminary established
- 1946 St. Elizabeth's Parish established
- 1949 St. Mary of the Hills Church built
- 1950 Milton Hospital built
Suffolk Resolves House moved from Village
- 1951 East Congregational Church built
- 1952 Charles S. Pierce School built
- 1953 Glover School built
- 1954 Disastrous hurricanes strike Town a hard blow
Fontbonne Academy founded
- 1955 Pine Tree Brook goes on tremendous rampage
East Milton Square torn up for South Shore Expressway
- 1956 Vose School building torn down

Bibliography

The author of an historical work is very prone to display his erudition by presenting as large as possible a list of authorities and materials consulted. I must admit that I was tempted, but I have succeeded in resisting the impulse. Many sources, both of printed material and of manuscripts, have been consulted. Dr. Teele's *History of Milton* was of course by far the most valuable single source. He was an ardent antiquarian, and in his time much word-of-mouth material of earlier days was still available. He was assisted in compiling his history by James M. Robbins and Edmund J. Baker, both then elderly men, whose roots went far back into Milton history, and whose interest in the life of the town commenced in their early youth. Dr. Teele's work thus was indispensable, but there exists today material not then available, or in some cases, not utilized by him, and of course much water has flowed by Neponset Mill since 1887. I have used references and footnotes somewhat sparingly, but I believe that all that I have said can be justified. One who questions some of my statements or who wishes to pursue matters farther will find notes and lists of source material upon which this book is based deposited at the Milton Public Library.

Index



Index

- Academy, 99
- Alewives, 15, 63
- Algerine Corner, source of name, 18n
- Anglican Church, 134
- Animals, native wild, 14
- Apthorp, Harrison Otis, 103, 247
- Auditors, 155

- Badcock, 31, 86
 - Ebenezer, 228
 - Enoch, 87
 - inventory, 240
 - George, 86
 - Robert, 193, 247
 - William, 87
- Bailiff, 142
- Baker, Edmund, 247
 - marries Daniel Vose's daughter, 73
 - builds a mill, 77
 - installs tub wheels, 78
- Edmund J., writes Dorchester History, 15
 - makes first Village map, 41
- Dr. James, 247
- Walter, 247
- Bakeries, water cracker, 41
- Baptist Church, 138
- Baxter, Jesse B., 59
- Bear, 14
- Belcher, Gov. Jonathan, 248
 - buys house in Milton, 37
- Rev. Joseph builds mill, 34, 68
- Belknap, Rev. Jeremy, teaches Milton
 - school, 95
 - resigns pastorate, 125
- Biographical Sketches, 247-263
- Blake, William, 193, 248

- Blue Hill Observatory, 16, 215
 - Reservation, 52
 - Village, 46
- Board of Health, 153
- Boies, Capt. James, 248
 - makes paper, 70
 - builds paper mill, 72-73
 - at Dorchester Heights in 1776, 203
- Bourne, Admiral Nehemiah, 248
- Bowditch, Ernest W., 248
- Boylston, Dr. Zabdiel, inoculates for
 - smallpox, 211
- Bradley, Capt. John, 202
- Braintree Church, 120
- Bread, corn, 17
- Bridge, the first, 19
 - Hubbard's, 83
 - Granite Ave., 83
 - Neponset, 83
 - Paul's, 83
 - Village, 83
- Briggs, Daniel, 248
 - establishes shipyard, 88
 - ordered out of town, 165
- Bronsdon, John, inventory, 236-237
- Brown, John, visits Milton, 48
- Bryant, Gridley, 248
 - builds Granite Railway, 84-85
- Bunker Hill Monument, 84-85
- Business census of 1885, 50

- Capen, John, builds mill dam, 76
- Catholic Church, first parish, 138
- Cattle, 20-21
 - first Jersey, 45
- Census, first of 1765, 37

Index

- Chickataubut, chief of Neponsets, 8, 248
- Chocolate manufacture, 74
 - mills sold, 61
- Church, Anglican, 134
 - Baptist, 138
 - Catholic, 138
 - early lack of, 121
 - Episcopal, 139
 - finances, 129
 - membership requirement, 116-117
 - Methodist, 139
 - service, 118
 - Unitarian, 134-137
- Churchill, Asaph, 42, 249
 - Joseph McK., 249
- Clams as pig feed, 16
- Clapp, Ebenezer, a schoolmaster, 92
 - Ezra, builds a mill, 71
- Clarke, Richard, 70
- Clayton, H. Helm, 216
- Clerk of the Market, 145
 - of the Writs, 147
 - Town, 158
- Cloud studies, first, 215
- Club, Woman's, 55, 58
- Collecott, Richard, 249
 - builds first house, 18
 - supply officer in Pequot War, 191
- Collector of Taxes, 153
- Colson, David, 71
- Columban Seminary, 265
- Commissioners to end small causes, 145
- Committee, use in town government, 142, 152-153
 - School, 100, 109, 144, 155
 - Warrant, 146, 156-157, 162-163
- Concord Fight, Milton's inglorious part, 202
- Constables, 142
 - their duties, 143
- Covenant, Church, 123
- Cowherds, 21
- Crane, Benjamin, 195
 - Henry, 249
 - inventory, 228
- Crehore, Benjamin, 249
 - makes artificial leg, 209
 - makes power loom, 215
- Crops in early days, 26
- Croud, Mary, one of last of the Indians, 11
- Cunningham, Edward, 249
 - Mary A., 249
 - establishes trust, 58, 85
- Dame school, 94
- Daniels, Mrs. William, teaches Indians, 11
 - William, 250
 - keeps a tavern, 25
- Deer reeves, 153
- Deputy to General Court, 148
- Diet of early settlers, 17
- Dike, John, inventory, 240
- Directory, Milton, of 1885, 49
- Dorchester Company, 17
 - initial settlement, 17
 - boundaries, 17
 - Church, 114
 - Meeting House, 120
- Dress, Puritan, 113
- Drug and dye manufacture, 77
- Edwards, Rev. Jonathan, 128
- Electricity, introduction of, 54
- Eliot, Rev. John, 9, 11
- Emerson, Rev. Joseph, 121
- Episcopal Church, 139
- Everden, Walter, 65
- Fairmount district, 45
- Fallon, Patrolman William, 176-177
- Federalist Party, 131
- Felt, Willard, 250
 - made first railway cars, 209
- Fences, 22
- Fence Viewers, 142
- Fenno, Joseph, partner of Daniel Vose, 34
 - builds vessels, 87
- Field, Wm. L. W., 84
- Fields, Indian, 12-13
- Fire Department, Town, 184-185
- Firemen, 179-187
- Firewards, 182
- Fish, varieties of, 15-16
- Fishways, 78
- Fontbonne Academy, 265
- Forbes Family, 42
- Forbes, Dorothy, 205
 - Rev. John, 205
 - John M., 250

Index

- a winter resident, 48
- and Milton Academy, 103
- gives land for school, 106
- John Murray, 85, 250
- Ralph Bennet, 85, 250
- Robert Bennet, 85, 250
 - student at Academy, 102
- William H., 52, 251
- Fowl, wild, 15
- Foye, William, 37
- Fulling mill, 65
 - the process, 67
- Furnace, introduction of, 98
- Gas lighting, introduction of, 54
- Gile, Rev. Samuel, 133, 137, 251
- Gill, Gen. Jacob, 165
 - John, 66, 251
- Gillespie, Andrew, 73
- Glover, John, his Milton farm, 21, 251
 - Dr. Samuel, first postmaster, 251
- Gooch, Col. Joseph, 251
- Gourgas, John Mark, 212-213, 251
- Granite Railway, 85
- Granite trade, 84-85
 - decline of, 60
- Grist mill, first in New England, 64
 - the grinding operation, 64
- Gulliver, Anthony, 252
 - Samuel, 196
- Gunpowder mill, 65
 - process of manufacture, 66
- Hannon, John, chocolate maker, 74, 252
- Harling, Thomas, 252
- Harris, Dr. Thaddeus W., 252
- Haywards, 151
- Hazelton, John, 70
- Heath hen, 15
- Hebard, Samuel C., 175
- Highways, 169-173
- Hinckley, Thomas H., 252
- Hobart, Caleb, 42, 252
- Health, Board of, 153
- Hog reeves, 145
- Holbrook, Dr. Amos, 153, 253
 - ordered out of town, 165
 - in vaccination drive, 212-213
- Hollingsworth, Mark, 76
- Hollis, Thomas, 253
 - Thomas, Jr., 253
- Holman, John, 253
 - in fur trade with Collecott, 18
 - Thomas, Town Clerk, 147
 - a trooper in 1676, 196
- Holmes, Dr. C. C., 253
- Hooks, wolf, 14
- Hospital, 58
- Houghton, Ralph, 254
- House, location of first, 18
- Houses, list of old, 242-243
- How, Peggy, 253
- Hunt, Rev. Nathan, 138
 - Sereno D., 107
- Huntoon, Rev. Benjamin, 137, 254
 - Daniel T. V., 10
- Hutchinson, Anne, 116
 - Gov. Thomas, 204-205, 254
 - builds house in Milton, 36
 - William, 254
- Indian corn, 64
 - Fields, 12
- Indians, 7-12
 - Massachusetts tribe, 8
 - Neponset tribe, 8
 - Plague of 1616-17, 8
 - Punkapoag family names, 8
- Inflation during Revolution, 206-207
- Inoculation, 210-211
- Jackson, Jonathan, builds house, 36
 - builds slitting mill, 71
- Jeanne d'Arc Academy, 265
- Jenner, Dr. Edward, 212
- Jersey cattle, first in America, 45
- Josiah, Charles, an Indian, 12
- Kidder, Nathaniel T., 190
- King Philip's War, 9, 10, 27, 193-197
- Kinsley, Stephen, 120, 254
- Kitchamakin, deeds Milton lands, 12, 254
- Kites at Blue Hill, 216-217
- Land, allotment of, 19
- Landing place, 83-84
 - first one at Gulliver's Creek, 23
- Lesley, Peter, 254

Index

- Liberty Pole, location of, 96
- Library, Public, 189-190
 - Ladies' Circulating, 46
- Lighting, gas, 54
 - electric, 54
- Lillie, Capt. John, 255
 - ordered out of town, 165
- Lincoln, Abraham, speaks in Neponset Village, 46
- Lion, Preserved, 255
- Log cabin, 117n

- Mann, Horace, 105
 - Rev. Samuel, 123
- Maps, of Milton, 4
 - 1634, 5
 - 1662, 24
 - 1700, 28
 - 1770, 32
 - 1831, 40
 - 1857, 47
 - 1888, 51
 - of Milton Village, 1765, 35
 - 1826, 43
 - of land grants, 20
- Martin, Nathan C., 41, 255
 - Henry, 256
 - Eleanor P., 256
- Mather, Cotton, and smallpox
 - inoculation, 211
- Mattapan, place name, 19n
 - mills at, 71-73
- McKean, Rev. Joseph, 130, 132-133, 255
- McKenzie, Andrew, builds snuff mill, 73
- McLean, Hugh, 255
 - builds paper mill, 72-73
 - John, 73, 255
- Meeting House, the first, 23, 120
 - second, 27
 - third, 33, 117
 - assignment of seats, 128
- Methodist Church, 137
- Mighill, Rev. Thomas, teaches children,
 - 92, 121, 124-125, 256
- Militia, 192
- Mill, chocolate, 74-75
 - drug and dye, 77
 - fulling, 67
 - grist, 64
 - "homespun", 80
 - paper, 69
 - powder, 65-66
 - saw, 73
 - saw, at Dedham, 66
 - slitting, 72
 - snuff, 72-73
- Miller, Samuel, inventory, 230-232
 - Rev. Ebenezer, 256
 - Col. Stephen, 256
- Milton, first settlement, 22
 - boundaries, 26
- Milton Academy, 99, 102-103
- Milton Hospital, 265
- Mingo, an Indian, 10
- Minister, position of Colonial, 124
 - engaged in trade, 126
- Ministers' Association, 122
- Moderator, 145, 151
- Moose, 14
- Morison, Rev. John H., 256
- Morton, Thomas, 7
 - describes Milton area, 13-14
 - his plantation burned, 18
- Murray, Dorothy, 205
 - Elizabeth, 205
- Music, church, 118
 - at parsonage, 30

- New State, source of name, 106n
- Neponset River, economic value, 63

- O'Beirne, Rev. Patrick, 138
- Observatory, Blue Hill, 52, 215-218
- Occupations, census of, in 1885, 49
- Overseers of the Poor, 150
- Oxenbridge, Rev. John, 65

- Paper mill, first New England, 69
 - the process, 69-70
- Parks, Blue Hill Reservation, 52
 - Cunningham, 58, 85
- Parsonage, first, 25
 - second, 27
- Pay of Town officers in 1837, 155
- Perkins, Col. Thomas Handasyd, 85
- Pierce, Charles S., 82
 - Edward L., 46, 82, 256
 - Henry L., 257

Index

- buys paper mill, 76
- buys Baker's mill, 81-82
- Jesse, 82
- Lanslet, first pound keeper, 148
- Dr. M. Vassar, 257
- Maurice, 176-177
- Col. Samuel, catches fish in Neponset, 15
- Pigs, yokes and rings, 25
- Pilgrims, 7
- Pitcher, Andrew, 257
 - inventory, 222-223
 - Nathaniel, 148
- Police, 175-177
- Ponkapoag (place name), 9
 - last of reservation sold, 10
- Poor, the, 165-168
- Post Office, 41
- Pound Keeper, 144, 148
- Preston's chocolate and fulling mill, 75
- Prudential Committee, 97, 105
- Punkapoag Indians, 10
- Quakers, 132n
- Radiosonde, 217-218
- Railway, Granite, 41
 - arrives in Village, 45
 - arrives at East Milton, 49
 - Village, 85
- Randolph, Edmund, 65
- Rawson, Edward, 65
- Reed, Jason, 257
- Rising Sun Tavern, 41
- Robbins, Edward H., 101, 130, 257
 - in smallpox drive, 213
 - James M., 130, 257
 - Rev. Nathaniel, 129-130, 258
- Rotch, A. Lawrence, 215-216, 258
 - Benjamin, 45
 - Joanna, 258
- Roxbury, first grist mill, 64
- Ruggles, John, 258
- Russell, Col. Henry S., 258
 - James S., 258
 - Hon. Jonathan, 258
- Sacco-Vanzetti, 61
- Safford, Nathaniel F., 258
- Saint Agatha's Parish, 265
- Saint Elizabeth's Parish, 265
- Saint Mary of the Hills Parish, 265
- Salisbury, William, inventory, 224-225
- Salt works, attempted establishment
 - by Town, 206
- Sanderson, Isaac, builds paper mill, 78, 259
- Sanitation, water supply and sewerage,
 - 52-53
- Saugus Iron Works, 71n, 72
- Sawmill, Dedham, 66
 - Milton, 73
- Schools, 91-111
 - moving, 92
 - Dame, 94
 - districts, 97
 - grammar, 98
 - Prudential committee, 97
 - schoolbooks, 94
 - Committee, 144, 155
 - powers of, 100, 109
- Scotch Woods, 34
- Scaler of Leather, 148
 - of Weights and Measures, 145
- Selectmen, 142
 - duties in 1669, 147
- Sewall, Samuel, 65
 - visits fulling mill, 67
 - attends Thacher funeral, 127
- Sewers, Metropolitan, 50, 53
- Shellfish, 16
- Sherman, Roger, 95
- Shipbuilding, 86-88
- Slaves, 39, 39n
- Slitting mill, 35, 71
 - the process, 71-72
- Smallpox, 9, 153, 210-215
- Smith, James, 259
 - Jeremiah, 70, 259
 - Rachel, 94
- Snow removal, 60
- Snuff mill, 72
- Social services
 - Social Service League, 58
 - Visiting Nurse, 58
 - Hospital, 58
- South Shore Expressway, 265
- Spirits, alcoholic, sale forbidden, 25
 - distilled by minister, 29
 - given to paupers, 167

Index

- Sprague, Dr., 153
 Statistics, Milton, 245-246
 Stebbins, Edith E., 259
 Stedman, Dr. Benjamin, inventory, 241
 Stone, Nathaniel H., 259
 Stoughton, Israel, 259
 builds bridge, 19
 builds grist mill, 63
 Stove, introduction of, 97
 none in Meeting House in 1810, 119
 cooking, 241
 Street, cars, 54
 lighting, 174
 Suffolk Resolves, 200-201
 Suffrage, women's, 152
 Summer residents, 36, 42
 Sumner Dam, 75
 Sumner, Roger, 259
 Sunday observance, 118-119
 sports allowed, 60
 Supervisors of Highways, 144
 Surveyors of Highways, 148
 of Hemp and Flax, 153
 Swift, Thomas, 260
 in charge of Indians, 9
 a corporal, 193
 a quartermaster, 195
 guardian of Punkapoags, 197
 a lieutenant, 198

 Tavern, Badcock's, 34
 William Daniels', 24
 Miller's, 41
 Rising Sun, 41
 Tax rates, 245-246
 Taylor, Rev. John, 127, 260
 Teele, Rev. Albert K., 260
 Telephone, introduction of, 52
 Temperance, 48
 Temple Shalom, 265
 Tenterhook, 67
 Tepee, 9n
 Thacher, Oxenbridge, 260
 Rev. Peter, hires Indians, 9
 his diary, 29, 126
 distills spirits, 30
 plays viola da gamba, 30
 teaches writing, 92
 builds house, 125
 funeral, 127
 inventory, 226-227
 Rev. Thomas, 125
 proprietor of powder mill, 65
 smallpox broadside, 210
 Thatching (roof), 122
 Thayer, Beza, inventory, 233
 Tileston, Edmund, 76
 Tileston and Hollingsworth, 73
 Tithingmen, 148
 Tolerance, religious, 114
 Tories, list of Milton, 204
 Torrey, Rev. Samuel, 121, 125
 Town Clerk, 145, 158
 Town Collector, 143
 Town landings, 83, 84
 Town Meeting, 141-164
 attendance at, 160
 representative form, 161
 Town Report, 155
 Transportation, auto buses, 55, 60
 bicycle, 55
 East Milton railroad, 49, 85
 electric street cars, 54, 60
 horse cars to Boston, 46, 49
 private automobiles, 57
 railroad in 1880's, 49
 M.T.A. rapid transit, 58
 stage to Boston, 44
 Village Railroad, 45
 Traps, steel, animal, 14
 Trees, early species, 13
 Tucker, Isaac, inventory, 237-238
 Capt. Ebenezer, 202
 Capt. Jeremiah, 202
 Deacon John A., 261
 Manasseh, builds mill, 71, 261
 Nathaniel, 42
 inventory, 238-240
 Robert, 29, 261
 inventory, 225-226
 Timothy, inventory, 234-235
 Turkeys, 14
 Turnpikes, 171

 Unitarian movement, 134-137
 Unquity, 8, 9

 Vaccination, 212-214

Index

- Valuation, tax rate, etc., 245-246
- Vose, Capt. Daniel, 261
 - starts a store, 34, 84
 - partner in paper mill, 70
 - marries Jeremiah Smith's daughter, 73
 - operates chocolate mill, 75
 - builds dam, 76
 - builds vessels, 87
 - captain of artillery, 202
- Col. Josiah, 261
- Gen. Joseph, 261
- Capt. Oliver, 202
- Robert, 261
 - buys Glover farm, 23
 - sells land for parsonage, 121
- Thomas (1641-1708), 261
 - Town Clerk and schoolmaster, 92
 - a corporal, 193
 - a lieutenant, 195
 - a captain, 198
- Thomas (1707-1760), inventory, 229-230, 261
- Wadsworth, Rev. Benjamin, 262
 - Elijah, 144
 - Samuel, a sergeant, 193
 - killed by Indians, 194-195
- Ware, Emma Forbes, starts hospital, 58, 262
- Harriet, 262
- Dr. Jonathan, 78, 262
- Warrant, 146
- Warrant Committee, 146, 156-157, 162-163
- Wars, the, 191-208
- Waterhouse, Dr. Benjamin, 212
- Water power, 63
- Webb & Twombly mill, 77
- Webster, Mary P., 262
- Whitefield, Rev. George, 129
- Whitney, Mrs. A. D. T., 262
 - Ellerton P., 262
 - Gen. Moses, 41, 42, 263
 - owns tannery, 82
- Wigglesworth, George, 263
- Wigwam, 9n
- Willard, Lieut., partner in fur trade, 18
 - Solomon, 85
- Wolcott, Gov. Roger, 263
- Wolf pit, 14, 31
- Wollaston, 12
 - annexed to Boston, 18
- Wolves, 14
- Women's suffrage, 152
- Zoning and building restrictions, 59
- Zoning by law, 265



Twelve hundred copies of this book have been printed for the Milton Historical Society by The Stinehour Press, Lunenburg, Vermont. The collotype illustrations were printed by The Meriden Gravure Company, Meriden, Connecticut, and the binding was done by the Russell-Rutter Company, New York, New York. The wood engravings have been printed from original blocks cut for A. K. Teele's *History of Milton*, 1887.

This is copy number 800



